

SB
DAY, T
HISTORY...
1818
VOL. II



37131 048 633 580

I, 244

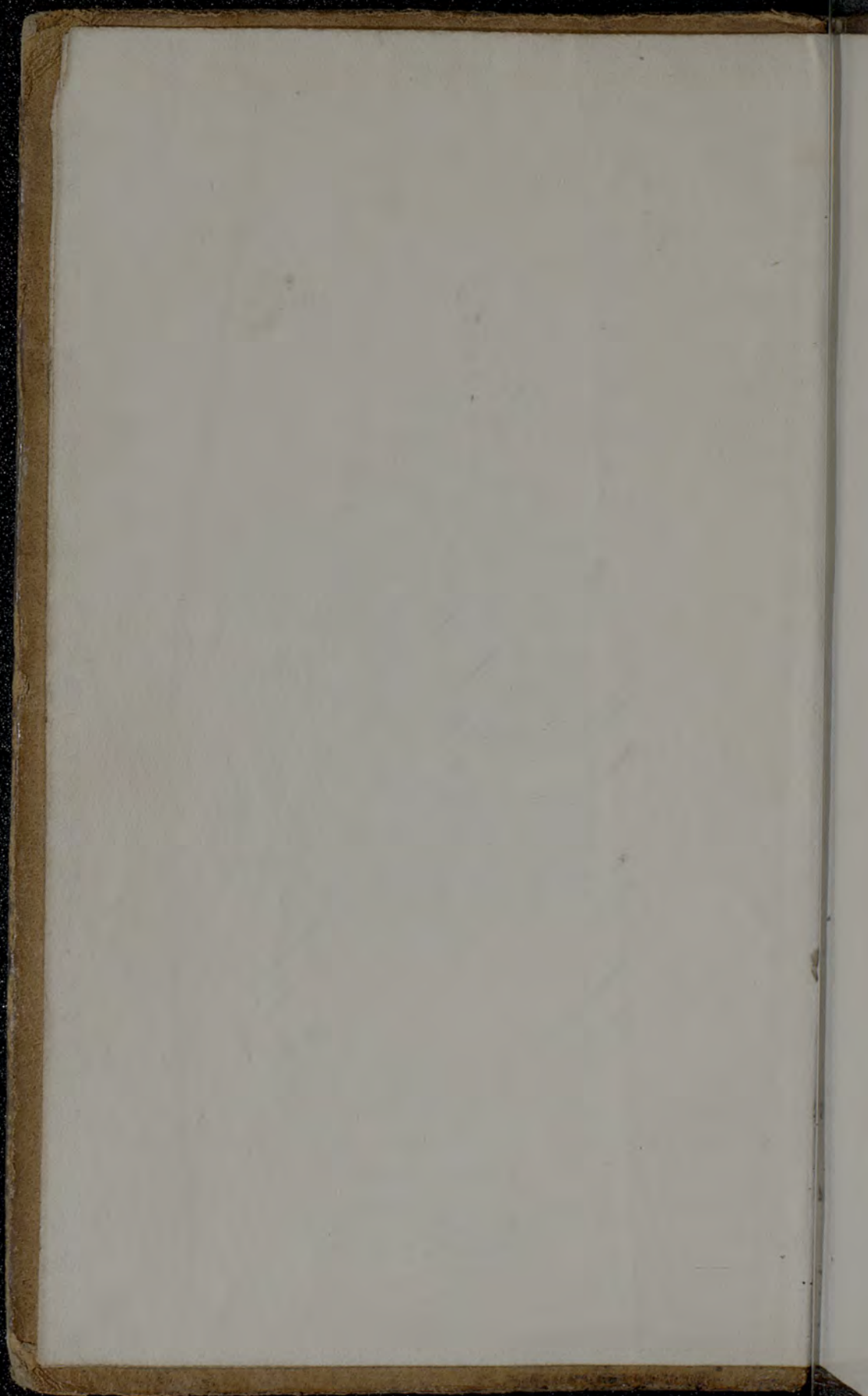
This book forms part of
The Osborne Collection of Children's Books
presented to the Toronto Public Libraries by
Edgar Osborne
in memory of his wife
MABEL OSBORNE

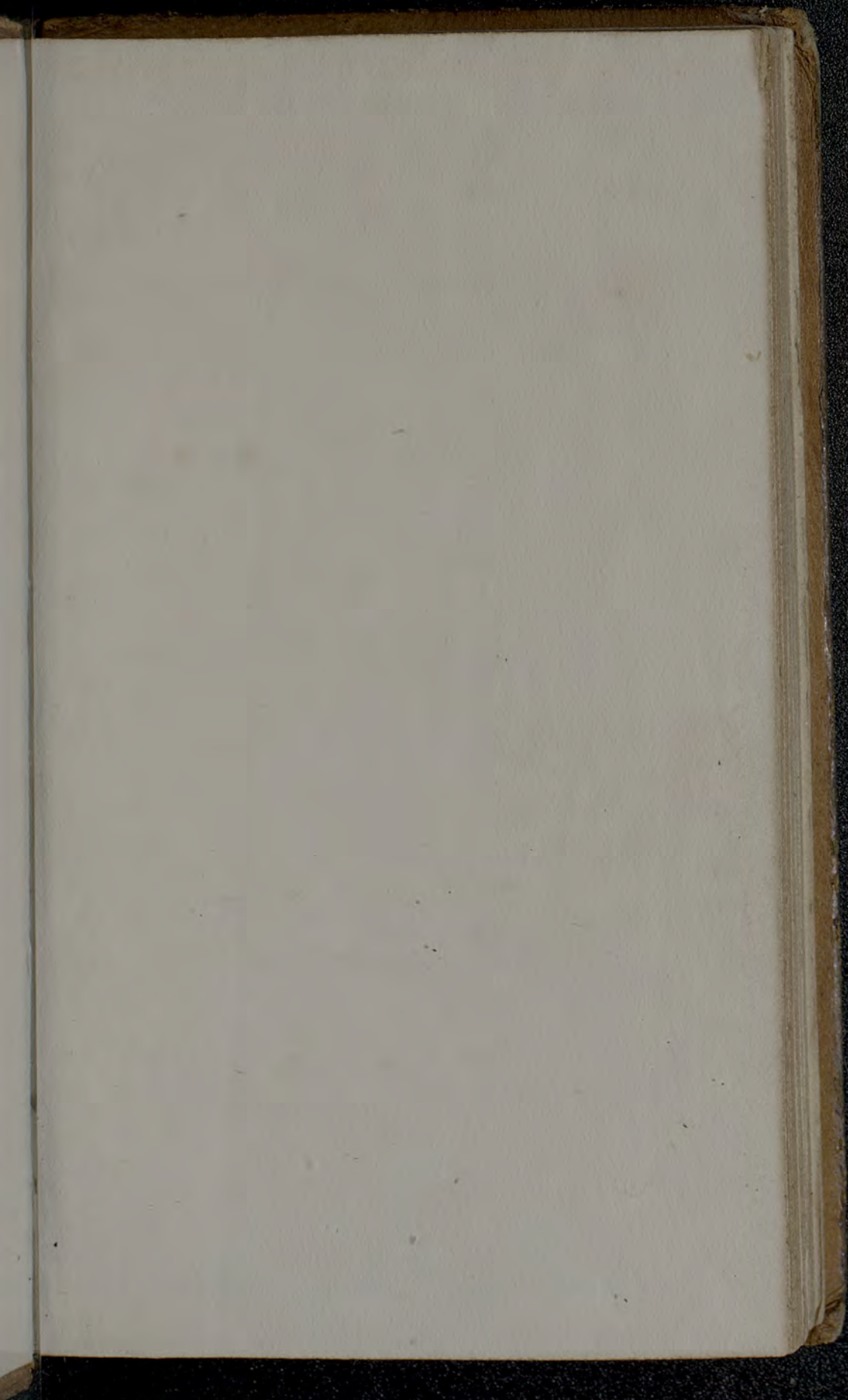
Mrs Elizabeth Maynard Smith

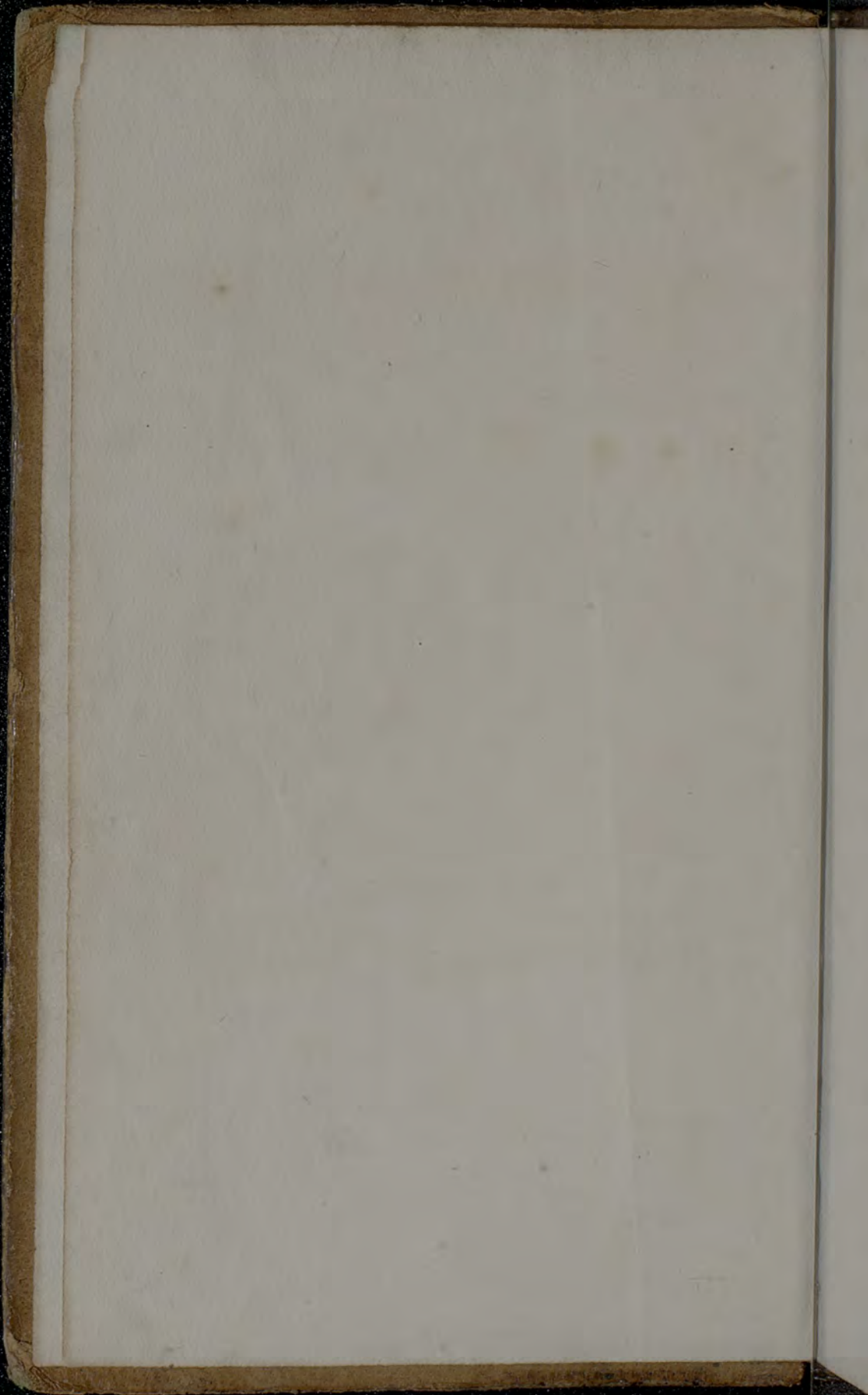
February 8th 1825

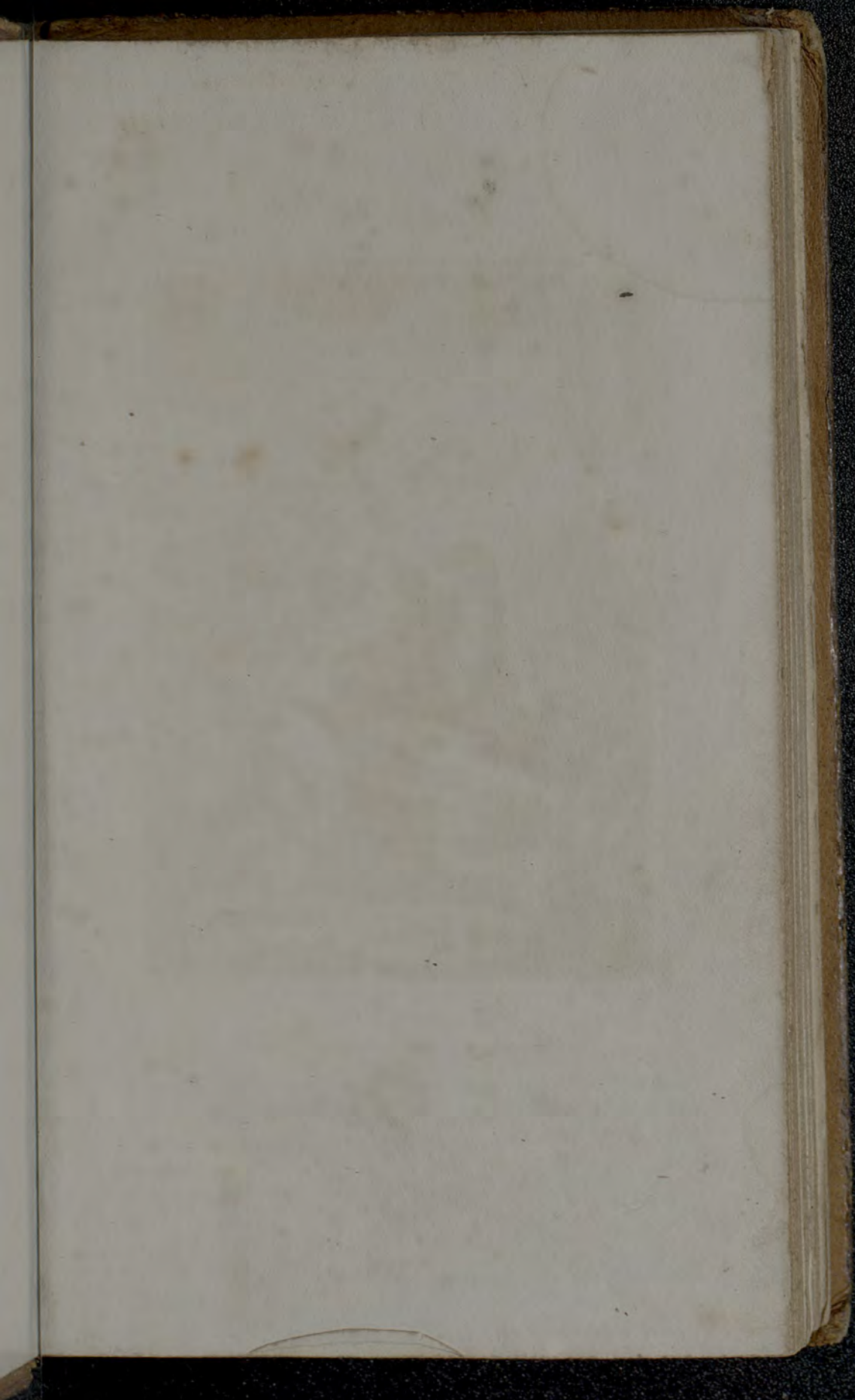
The gift of her Mamma.

DS









Frontispiece Vol 2



*Harry assisting the
Wood-cleaver.*

vide page 3.

THE
HISTORY
OF
SANDFORD & MERTON:
A WORK
INTENDED FOR THE USE OF CHILDREN.

BY THOMAS DAY, Esq.

But I do not know that there is upon the face of the earth a more useless, more contemptible, and more miserable animal, than a wealthy, luxurious man, without business or profession, arts, sciences, or exercises.—LORD MONBODDO.

IN TWO VOLUMES.

~~~~~  
VOL. II.  
~~~~~

LONDON:

PRINTED FOR F. C. AND J. RIVINGTON; LAW AND WHITTAKER;
LONGMAN, HURST, REES, ORME, AND BROWN; DARTON, HAR-
VEY, AND DARTON; BALDWIN, CRADOCK, AND JOY; J. HARRIS;
SHERWOOD, NEELY, & O. JONES; R. FENNER; AND OGLE
AND CO.

1818.

HISTORY

SAUNDERS & WATSON

SA

AN

week
ings,
impro
ready
most
star he
Cephe
the br
tered
that
Then
tering
he cont
east to
their fo
Tommy
should

THE
HISTORY
OF
SANDFORD AND MERTON.

AND now the frost had continued for several weeks, and Tommy had taken advantage of the evenings, which generally proved clear and star-light, to improve his knowledge of the heavens. He had already ornamented his paper globe with several of the most remarkable constellations. Around the pole-star he had discovered Perseus and Andromeda, and Cepheus, and Cassiopeia's Chair. Between these and the bright Orion, which rose every night and glittered in the south, he discovered seven small stars that were set in a cluster, and called the Pleiades. Then underneath Orion, he discovered another glittering star, called Sirius, or the Dog-star. All these, he continually observed, journeyed every night from east to west, and then appeared the evening after in their former places. "How strange it is," observed Tommy one day to Mr. Barlow, "that all these stars should be continually turning about the earth!"

“How do you know,” replied Mr. Barlow, “that they turn at all?”

TOMMY.

Because I see them move every night.

MR. BARLOW.

But, how are you sure that it is the stars which move every night, and not the earth itself?

Tommy considered and said, “But then I should see the earth move, and the stars stand still.”

MR. BARLOW.

What, did you never ride in a coach?

TOMMY.

Yes, Sir, very often.

MR. BARLOW.

And did you then see that the coach moved, as you sat still and went along a level road?

TOMMY.

No, Sir, I protest I have often thought that the houses, and trees, and all the country glided swiftly along by the windows of the coach.

MR. BARLOW.

And did you never sail in a boat?

TOMMY.

Yes, I have, and I protest I have observed the same thing; for I remember, I have often thought the shore was running away from the boat, instead of the boat from the shore.

MR. BARLOW.

If that is the case, it is possible, even though the earth should move, instead of the stars, that you might only see what you do at present, and imagine, that the earth you are upon was at rest.

TOMMY.

But is it not more likely, that such little things as the stars and sun should move, than such a large thing as the earth?

MR. BARLOW.

And how do you know that the stars and sun are so small?

TOMMY.

I see them to be so, Sir. The stars are so small, that they are hardly to be seen at all: and the sun itself, which is much larger, does not seem bigger than a small round table.

The day after this conversation, as the weather was bright and clear, Mr. Barlow went out to walk with Harry and Tommy. As, by this time, Tommy was inured to fatigue, and able to walk many miles, they continued their excursion over the hills, till at last they came in sight of the sea. As they were diverting themselves with the immense prospect of water that was before them, Mr. Barlow perceived something floating at a distance, so small as to be scarcely discernible by the eye. He pointed it out to Tommy, who with some difficulty was able to distinguish it, and asked him what he thought it was.

Tommy answered, that he imagined it to be some little fishing-boat, but could not well tell, on account of the distance.

MR. BARLOW.

If you do not then see a ship, what is it you do see, or what does that object appear to your eyes?

TOMMY.

All that I can see, is no more than a little dusky speck, which seems to grow bigger and bigger.

MR. BARLOW.

And what is the reason it grows bigger and bigger?

TOMMY.

Because it comes nearer and nearer to me.

MR. BARLOW.

What, then, does the same thing sometimes appear small, and sometimes great?

TOMMY.

Yes, Sir, it seems small when it is at a great distance; for I have observed even houses and churches, when you are at some miles distant, seem to the eye very small indeed: and now I observe that the vessel is sailing towards us, and it is not, as I imagined, a little fishing-boat, but a ship with a mast, for I begin to distinguish the sails.

Mr. Barlow walked on a little while by the side of the sea, and presently Tommy called out again: "I protest I was mistaken again; for it is not a vessel with one mast, as I thought a little while ago, but a fine large ship with three great masts, and all her sails before the wind. I believe she must either be a large merchant-man, or else a frigate.

MR. BARLOW.

Will you then take notice of what you have now been saying? What was first only a little dusky speck, became a vessel with one mast, and now this vessel with one mast plainly appears a ship of a very large size, with all her masts, and sails, and rigging, complete. Yet all these three appearances are only the same object, at different distances from your eye.

TOMMY.

Yes, Sir; that is all very true indeed.

MR. BARLOW.

Why, then, if the ship, which is now full in sight, were to tack about again, and sail away from us as fast as she approached just now, what do you think would happen?

TOMMY.

It would grow less and less, every minute, till it appeared a speck again.

MR. BARLOW.

You said, I think, that the sun was a very small body, not bigger than a round table.

TOMMY.

Yes, Sir.

MR. BARLOW.

Supposing then he were to be removed to a much greater distance than he is at now, what would happen? Would he appear the same to your eyes?

Tommy considered for some time, and then said, "If the ship grows less and less, till at last it appears a mere speck, by going further and further, I should think the sun would do the same."

MR. BARLOW.

There you are perfectly right; therefore, if the sun were to depart further and further from us, at last he would appear no bigger than one of those twinkling stars, that you see at so great a distance above your head.

TOMMY.

That I perfectly comprehend.

MR. BARLOW.

But if, on the contrary, one of those twinkling stars were to approach nearer and nearer to where you

stand, what do you think would happen? Would it still appear of the same size?

TOMMY.

No, Sir. The ship as it came nearer to us appeared every moment larger, and therefore I think the star must do the same.

MR. BARLOW.

Might it not then at last appear as big as the sun now does; just as the sun would dwindle away to the size of a star, were it to be removed to a still greater distance?

TOMMY.

Indeed, I think it might.

MR. BARLOW.

What then do you imagine must happen, could the sun approach a great deal nearer to us? Would his size remain the same.

TOMMY.

No, I plainly see that he must appear bigger and bigger the nearer he comes.

MR. BARLOW.

If that is the case, it is not so very certain that the earth we inhabit is bigger than the sun and stars. They are at a very great distance from us; therefore, if any body could go from the earth towards the sun, how do you think the earth would appear to him as he journeyed on?

TOMMY.

Really, I can hardly tell.

MR. BARLOW.

No! Why, is it not the same thing whether an object goes from you, or you from the object? Is there

any difference between the ship's sailing away from us, and our walking away from the ship?

TOMMY.

No, Sir.

MR. BARLOW.

Did you not say, that if the sun could be removed further from our eyes, it would appear less?

TOMMY.

To be sure it would.

MR. BARLOW.

Why then, if the earth were to sink down from under our feet, lower and lower, what would happen? Would it have the same appearance?

TOMMY.

No, Sir; I think it must appear less and less, like the ship when it is sailing away.

MR. BARLOW.

Very right, indeed. But now attend to what I asked you just now: if a person could rise slowly into the air, and mount still higher and higher, towards the sun, what would happen?

TOMMY.

Why, the same as if the earth were to sink from under us: it would appear less and less.

MR. BARLOW.

Might not the earth then at least appear as small as the sun or moon does?

TOMMY.

I can hardly conceive that: and yet, I see it would appear less and less, the further he went.

MR. BARLOW.

Do you remember what happened to you, when you left the island of Jamaica?

TOMMY.

Yes, I do. One of the blacks held me upon the deck, and then I looked towards the island; and I thought that it began to move away from the ship, though, in reality, it was the ship moved away from the land. And then, as the ship continued sailing along the water, the island appeared less and less. First, I lost sight of the trees and houses that stood upon the shore; and then I could only see the highest mountains; and then I could scarcely see the mountains themselves; and, at last, the whole island appeared only like a dark mist above the water; and then the mist itself disappeared, and I could see nothing but a vast extent of water all round, and the sky above.

MR. BARLOW.

And must not this be exactly the case, if you could rise up into the air, higher and higher, and look down upon the earth?

TOMMY.

Indeed it must.

MR. BARLOW.

Now then you will be able to answer the question I asked you a little while ago: Could a person travel straight forward from the earth to the sun, how would they both appear to him as he went forward?

TOMMY.

The earth would appear less and less as he went from it, and the sun bigger and bigger.

MR. BARLOW.

Why, then, perhaps it would happen at last, that the sun appeared bigger than the earth.

TOMMY.

Indeed it might.

MR. BARLOW.

Then you see that you must no longer talk of the earth's being large, and the sun small, since that may only happen, because you are near the one, and at a great distance from the other. At least, you must now be convinced, that both the sun and stars must be immensely bigger than you would at first sight guess them to be.

As they were returning home, they happened to pass through a small town in their way, and saw a crowd of people going into a house, which gave Mr. Barlow the curiosity to enquire the reason. They were told, that there was a wonderful person there, who performed a variety of strange and diverting experiments. Upon Tommy's expressing a great desire to see these curious exhibitions, Mr. Barlow took them both in, and they all seated themselves among the audience. Presently the performer began his exhibitions, which very much diverted Tommy, and surprised the spectators. At length, after a variety of curious tricks upon cards, the conjuror desired them to observe a large basin of water, with the figure of a little swan floating upon the surface. "Gentlemen," said the man, "I have reserved this curious experiment for the last, because it is the most wonderful of all that I have to show, or that, per-

haps, was ever exhibited to the present hour. You see that swan; it is no more than a little image, without either sense or life. If you have any doubt upon the subject, take it up in your hands and examine it." Accordingly, several of the spectators took it up in their hands, and, after having examined it, set it down again upon the water. "Now," continued he, "this swan, which to you appears totally without sense or motion, is of so extraordinary a nature, that he knows me, his master, and will follow in any direction that I command." Saying this, he took out a little piece of bread, and whistling to his bird, ordered him to come to the side of the basin and be fed. Immediately, to the great surprise of all the company, the swan turned about and swam to the side of the basin. The man whistled again, and presently the swan turned himself round, and pursued the hand of his master to the other side of the basin. The spectators could hardly believe their eyes, and some of them got little pieces of bread, and held them out, imagining that he would do the same to them. But it was in vain they whistled and presented their bread; the bird remained unmoved upon the water, and obeyed no orders but those of his master. When this exhibition had been repeated over and over again, to the extreme delight and astonishment of all present, the company rose and dispersed, and Mr. Barlow and the little boys pursued their way home.

But Tommy's mind was so engaged with what he had seen, that for several days he could think and

talk of nothing else. He would give all that he had in the world, to find out this curious trick, and to be possessed of such a swan. At length, as he was one day talking to Harry upon the subject, Harry told him with a smile, that he believed he had found out the method of doing it; and that if he did not mistake, he would the next day show him a swan that would come to be fed as well as the conjuror's. Accordingly, Harry moulded a bit of wax into the shape of a swan, and placed it upon a basin of water. He then presented to it a piece of bread, and, to the inexpressible delight of Tommy, the swan pursued the bread, just as he had seen before. After he had several times diverted himself with this experiment, he wanted to be informed of the composition of this wonderful swan. Harry, therefore, showed him, within the body of the bird, a large needle, which lay across it from one end to the other. In the bread with which the swan was fed, he also showed him concealed a small bar of iron. Tommy could not comprehend all this, although he saw it before his eyes. But Mr. Barlow, who was present, taking up the bar of iron, and putting down several needles upon the table, Tommy was infinitely surprised to see the needles all jump up, one after another, at the approach of the bar, and shoot towards it, as if they had been possessed of life and sense. They then hung all about the bar so firmly, that, though it was lifted into the air, they all remained suspended, nor ever quitted their hold. Mr. Barlow then placed a key upon the table, and putting the iron near it, the key attached itself as

firmly to the bar, as the needles had done before. All this appeared so surprising to Tommy, that he begged an explanation of it from Mr. Barlow. That gentleman told him, that there was a stone often found in iron-mines, that was called the loadstone. This stone is naturally possessed of the surprising power of drawing to itself all pieces of iron that are not too large, nor placed at too great a distance. But what is equally extraordinary is, that iron itself, after having been rubbed upon the loadstone, acquires the same virtue as the stone itself, of attracting other iron. For this purpose, they take small bars of iron, and rub them carefully upon the loadstone, and when they have acquired this very extraordinary power, they call them magnets. When Harry had seen the exhibition of the swan, upon revolving it over in his mind, he began to suspect that it was performed entirely by the power of magnetism. Upon his talking to me about the affair, I confirmed him in his opinion, and furnished him with a small magnet to put into the bread, and a large needle to conceal in the body of the bird. So this is the explanation of the feat, which so much puzzled you a few days past.

Mr. Barlow had scarcely done speaking, when Tommy observed another curious property of the swan, which he had not found out before. This bird, when left to itself, constantly rested in one particular direction; and that direction was full north and south. Tommy enquired the reason of this, and Mr. Barlow gave him this additional explanation. "The persons that first discovered the

wonderful powers of the loadstone in communicating its virtues to iron, diverted themselves, as we do now, in touching needles and small pieces of iron, which they made to float upon water, and attracted them about with other pieces of iron. But it was not long before they found out, as you do now, another surprising property of this wonderful stone. They observed, that when a needle had once been touched by the loadstone, if it was left to float upon the water without restraint, it would invariably turn itself towards the north. In a short time, they improved the discovery further, and contrived to suspend the middle of the needle upon a point, so loosely that it could move about in every direction. This they covered with a glass case, and by this means they always had it in their power to find out all the quarters of the heavens and earth."

TOMMY.

Was this discovery of any great use?

MR. BARLOW.

Before this time, they had no other method of finding their way along the sea, but by observing the stars. They knew, by experience, in what parts of the sky certain stars appeared at every season of the year, and this enabled them to discover east, west, north, and south. But when they set out from their own country by sea, they knew in which direction the place was situated, which they were going to. If it lay to the east, they had only to keep the head of the ship turned full to that quarter of the heavens, and they would arrive at the place they were going to; and this they were enabled to do by observing

the stars. But frequently the weather was thick, and the stars no longer appeared; and then they were left to wander about the pathless ocean, without the smallest track to guide them in their course.

TOMMY.

Poor people! they must be in a dreadful situation indeed, tost about on such an immense place as the sea, in the middle of a dark night, and not able even to guess at their situation.

MR. BARLOW.

For this reason, they seldom dared to venture out of sight of shore, for fear of losing their way: by which means, all their voyages were long and tedious; for they were obliged to make them several times as long as they would have done, could they have taken the straight and nearest way. But soon after the discovery of this admirable property of the loadstone, they found that the needle which had been thus prepared, was capable of showing them the different points of the heavens, even in the darkest night. This enabled them to sail with greater security, and to venture boldly upon the immense ocean, which they had always feared before.

TOMMY.

How extraordinary, that a little stone should enable people to cross the sea, and to find their way from one country to the other! But I wonder why they take all these pains.

HARRY.

That you need not wonder at, when you consider that one country frequently produces what another does not; and therefore, by exchanging their differ-

ent commodities, both may live more conveniently than they did before.

HARRY.

But does not almost every country produce all that is necessary to support the inhabitants of it? and therefore they might live, I should think, even though they received nothing from any other country.

MR. BARLOW.

So might your father live, perhaps, upon the productions of his own farm; but he sometimes sells his cattle to purchase clothes; sometimes his corn to purchase cattle. Then he frequently exchanges with his neighbours one kind of grain for another; and thus their mutual conveniency is better promoted, than if each were to confine himself to the produce of his own land. At the same time it is true, that every country which is inhabited by men, contains within itself all that is necessary for their subsistence; and what they bring from other countries, is frequently more hurtful than salutary to them.

HARRY.

I have heard you say, that even in Greenland, the coldest and most uncomfortable country in the world, the inhabitants procure themselves necessaries, and live contented.

TOMMY.

What, is there a part of the world still colder than Lapland?

MR. BARLOW.

Greenland is still further north, and therefore colder and more barren. The ground is there covered with eternal snows, which never melt, even in the

summer. There are scarcely any animals to be found, excepting bears, which live by preying upon fish. There are no trees grow upon any part of the country, so that the inhabitants have nothing to build their houses with, excepting the planks and trees which the sea washes away from other countries, and leaves upon their coast. With these they erect large cabins, where several families live together. The sides of these huts are composed of earth and stones, and the top secured with turf; in a short time the whole is so cemented with frost, that it is impenetrable to the weather during the whole winter. Along the sides of the building are made several partitions, in each of which a Greenlander lives with his family. Each of these families have a small lamp continually burning before them, by means of which they cook their food and light themselves; and, what is equally necessary in so cold a country, keep up an agreeable warmth throughout their apartment. They have a few deer, which sometimes visit them in the summer, and which the Greenlanders kill whenever they can catch them; but they are almost entirely destitute of all the vegetables which serve as nourishment to man: so that they are obliged to be continually upon the sea, in order to catch fish for their maintenance.

TOMMY.

What a dreadful life must that be, in a country which is so cold!

MR. BARLOW.

In consequence of that extreme cold, those northern seas are full of such immense quantities of ice, that they are sometimes almost covered with them. Huge

pieces come floating down, which are not only as big as the largest houses, but even resemble small mountains. These are sometimes dashed against each other by the winds, with such immense force, that they would crush the strongest ship to pieces, and with a noise that exceeds the report of a cannon. Upon these pieces of ice are frequently seen white bears of an enormous size; which have either fallen asleep upon them, and so been carried away, or have straggled over those icy hills in search of fish.

TOMMY.

And is it possible that the inhabitants of such a country can find enough in it for all their necessities?

MR. BARLOW.

The necessities of life are very few, and are therefore to be found even in the most rugged climates, if men are not wanting to themselves, or deficient in industry. In plentiful countries like this, and most of the more temperate climates, great numbers are maintained in idleness, and imagine that they are only born to live upon the labour of others. But in such a country as Greenland is described to be, it requires continual exertion to procure the simplest support of human life; and therefore no one can live at all, who will not employ himself in the same manner as his neighbours.

TOMMY.

You said that these people had neither flesh nor corn; do they then clothe themselves with the skins of fish, as well as live upon them?

MR. BARLOW.

There is in those seas a peculiar species of animal

called a seal. He is nine or ten feet long, and has two small feet before, on which he is able to walk a little upon the shore; for he frequently comes out of the sea, and sleeps, or amuses himself upon the land or ice. His body is very large, and full of oil; and behind he has two legs which resemble fins, with which he swims in the water. This animal is the constant prey of the Greenlander, and furnishes him with all he wants. The flesh he eats, the fat serves him to feed his lamp, which is almost as necessary as food itself in that cold climate. With the skin he composes clothes that are impenetrable to the water, or lines the inside of his hut to keep out the weather. As this animal is so necessary to the existence of a Greenlander, it is his greatest glory to chase and take him. For this purpose, he places himself in a small narrow boat, the top of which is covered over with the skins of seals, and closes round the middle of the fisher so tight as entirely to exclude the water. He has a long oar, or paddle, broad at both ends, which he dips first on one side, then on the other, and rows along with incredible swiftness, over the roughest seas. He carries with him a harpoon, which is a kind of lance, or javelin, tied to a long thong, at the end of which is fixed a bladder, or some other light thing that sinks with difficulty. When the fisherman is thus prepared, he skims lightly along the waters, till he perceives at a distance one of these animals floating upon the surface. The Greenlander then approaches him as softly as he is able, and, if possible, contrives that the animal shall have the wind and sun in his eyes. When he is sufficiently near,

he throws his harpoon, and generally wounds the creature; in which case, he instantly hurries away, and carries with him the thong and bladder. But it is not long before he is compelled to rise again to the surface of the water to breathe; and then the Greenlander, who has been pursuing him all the time, attacks him anew, and dispatches him with a shorter lance, which he has brought with him for that purpose. He then ties his prey to his boat, and tows it after him to his family, who receive it with joy, and dress it for his supper. Although these poor people live a life of such continual fatigue, and are obliged to earn their food with so much hardship, they are generous and hospitable in the management of it; for not a person present but is invited to partake of the feast: and a Greenlander would think himself dishonoured for life, that should be thought capable of wishing to keep it all to himself.

TOMMY.

I think it seems as if the less people had, the more generous they are of it.

MR. BARLOW.

That is not unfrequently the case, and should be a lesson to many of our rich at home, who imagine that they have nothing to do with their fortune but to throw it away upon their pleasures; while there are so many thousands in want of the common necessities of life.

TOMMY.

But pray, Sir, have you no more particulars to tell me about these Greenlanders; for I think it is the most curious account I ever heard in my life?

MR. BARLOW.

There is another very curious particular indeed to be mentioned of these countries: in these seas is found the largest animal in the world; an immense fish, which is called the whale.

TOMMY.

Oh dear! I have heard of that extraordinary animal. And pray, Sir, do the Greenlanders ever catch them?

MR. BARLOW.

The whale is of such a prodigious size, that he sometimes reaches seventy or eighty, or even more than a hundred feet in length. He is from ten to above twenty feet in height, and every way large in proportion. When he swims along the seas, he appears rather like a large vessel floating upon the waters, than a fish. He has two holes in his head, through which he blows out water to a great height in the air; immense fins, and a tail with which he almost raises a tempest when he lashes the sea with it. Would you not believe that such an animal was the most dreadful of the whole brute creation?

TOMMY.

Indeed, Sir, I should; I should think that such a fish would upset whole ships, and devour the sailors.

MR. BARLOW.

Far from it—it is one of the most innocent, in respect to man, that the ocean produces; nor does he ever do him the least hurt, unless by accidentally overturning vessels with his enormous bulk. The food he lives upon is chiefly small fish, and par-

ticularly herrings. These fish are bred in such prodigious shoals, amid the ice of those northern climates, that the sea is absolutely covered with them for miles together. Then it is that the hungry whale pursues them, and thins their numbers, by swallowing thousands of them in their course.

HARRY.

What numbers indeed must such a prodigious fish devour of those small animals!

MR. BARLOW.

The whale in his turn falls a prey to the cruelty and avarice of man. Some indeed are caught by the Greenlanders, who have a sufficient excuse for persecuting him with continual attacks, in their total want of vegetables and every species of food which the earth affords. But the Europeans, who are too nice and squeamish to eat his flesh, send out great numbers of ships, every year, to destroy the poor whale, merely for the sake of the oil which his body contains, and the elastic bones which are known by the name of whale-bone, and applied to several purposes. When those that go upon this dangerous expedition discern a whale floating at a distance, they instantly send out a large boat to pursue him. Some of the men row along as gently as possible, while the person that is appointed to attack the fish stands upon the fore-part of the boat, holding in his hand a sharp harpoon, with which he is prepared to wound his prey. This is fastened to a long cord, which lies ready coiled up in the boat, so that they may let it out in an instant, when the fish is struck; for such is his prodigious force, that should the least impedi-

ment occur to stop the rope in its passage, he would instantly draw the boat after him, down to the bottom of the sea. In order to prevent these dangerous accidents, a man stands constantly ready to divide the rope with a hatchet, in case it should happen to tangle; and another is continually pouring water over it, for fear the swiftness of the motion should make it take fire. The poor whale that is thus wounded, darts away with an inconceivable rapidity, and generally plunges to the bottom of the sea. They have a prodigious quantity of cord ready to let out, and when their store is exhausted, there are generally other boats ready to supply more. Thus is the poor animal overpowered and killed, in spite of his immense bulk and irresistible strength; for, gradually wearied with his own efforts and the loss of blood, he soon relaxes in his speed, and rises again to the top of the water. Then it is that the fishers, who have pursued him all the time with the hopes of such an opportunity, approach him anew, and attack him with fresh harpoons; till in the end his strength is entirely exhausted, the waves themselves are tinged with a bloody colour from his innumerable wounds, and he writhes himself about in strong convulsions and unutterable pain. Then the conflict is soon at an end; in a short time he breathes his last, and turning upon his back, floats like some large vessel upon the surface of the sea. The fishers then approach, and cut off the fins and other valuable parts, which they stow on board their ships: the fat, or blubber, as it is often called, is received into large hogsheads, and when boiled to purify it, composes

the common oil which is applied to so many useful purposes. The remains of this vast body are left a prey to other fish, and to the Greenlanders, who carefully collect every fragment which they can find, and apply it to their own use. Sometimes they go to pursue the whale themselves; but when they do, it is in large numbers, and they attack him nearly in the same manner with the Europeans; only as they are not so well supplied with cord, they fix the skins of seals, which they have inflated with air, to the end of the thongs which are tied to their harpoons; and this serves both to weary out the fish, who drags them with him under the water, and to discover him the instant he approaches to the surface.

HARRY.

I cannot help pitying the poor whale, which is thus persecuted for the sake of his spoils. Why cannot man let this poor beast live unmolested, in the midst of the snows and ice in which he was born?

MR. BARLOW.

You ought to know enough of the world, to be sensible, that the desire of gain will tempt men upon every expedition. However, in this case you must consider, that the whale himself is continually supported by murdering thousands of herrings and other small fish; so that, were they possessed of reason, they would welcome the Europeans, who came to destroy their enemies, as friends and benefactors.

TOMMY.

But pray, Sir, how do the little boys amuse themselves in such a dismal country? Do their fathers take them out a fishing with them?

MR. BARLOW.

When the men come home all covered with wet and icicles, and sit down comfortably in their huts to feast upon their prey, their common conversation is about the dangers and accidents they have met with in their expedition. A Greenlander relates, how he bounded over the waves to surprise a monstrous seal; how he pierced the animal with his harpoon, which had liked to have dragged the boat with him under the water; how he attacked him again in closer combat; how the beast, enraged with his wounds, rushed upon him in order to destroy him with his teeth; and how, in the end, by courage and perseverance, he triumphed over his adversary, and brought him safe to land. All this he relates with the vehemence and interest which people naturally feel for things which concern them nearly: he stands in the midst of his countrymen, and describes every minute circumstance of his adventures. The little children gather round, and greedily catch the relation: they feel themselves interested in every circumstance; they hear, and wish to share in the toils and glory of their fathers. When they are a little bigger, they exercise themselves in small skiffs, with which they learn to overcome the wave. Nothing can be more dangerous, or require greater dexterity, than the management of a Greenlander's boat. The least thing oversets it, and then the man, who cannot disengage himself from the boat, which is fastened to his middle, sinks down below the waves, and is inevitably drowned if he cannot regain his balance. The only hope of doing this is placed in the proper

application of his oar; and therefore the dexterous management of this implement forms the early study of the young Greenlanders. In their sportive parties they row about in a thousand different manners; they dive under their boats, and then set them to rights with their paddle; they learn to glide over the roughest billows, and face the greatest dangers with intrepidity: till in the end they acquire sufficient strength and address to fish themselves, and to be admitted into the class of men.

HARRY.

Pray, Sir, is this the country where men travel about upon sledges that are drawn by dogs?

TOMMY.

Upon sledges drawn by dogs! That must be droll indeed. I had no idea that dogs could ever draw carriages.

MR. BARLOW.

The country you are speaking of is called Kamtschatka; it is indeed a cold and dreary country, but very distant from Greenland. The inhabitants there train up large dogs, which they harness to a sledge, upon which the master sits, and so performs his journey along the snow and ice. All the summer the dogs are turned loose to shift for themselves, and prey upon the remains of fish, which they find upon the shore or the banks of rivers; for fish is the common food of all the inhabitants. In the winter the Kamtschatkans assemble their dogs, and use them for the purposes I have mentioned. They have no reins to govern their dogs, or stop them in their

course; but the driver sits upon his sledge, and keeps himself as steady as he is able, holding in his hand a short stick, which he throws at the dogs, if they displease him, and catches again with great dexterity as he passes. This way of travelling is not without danger; for the temper of the dogs is such, that when they descend hills and slippery places, and pass through woods where the driver is exposed to wound himself with the branches and stumps, they always quicken their pace. The same is observed in case their master should fall off, which they instantly discover by the sudden lightness of the carriage; for then they set off at such a rate that it is difficult to overtake them. The only remedy which the Kamtschatkan finds, is to throw himself at his length upon the ground, and lay hold on the empty sledge, suffering himself to be thus dragged along the earth, till the dogs, through weariness, abate their speed. Frequently in their journeys, these travellers are surprised by unexpected storms of wind and snow, which render it impracticable to proceed further. How ill would a European fare to be thus abandoned, at the distance perhaps of an hundred miles, or more, from any habitable place; exposed without shelter in the midst of extensive plains, and unable to procure either food or fire! But the hardy native of these cold climates, inured from his infancy to support difficulties, and almost superior to the elements, seeks the shelter of the first forest he can find; then wrapping himself round in his warm fur garment, he sits with his legs under him, and thus bundled up, suffers himself to be covered round with the

snow, except a small hole, which he leaves for the conveniency of breathing. In this manner he lies with his dogs around him, who assist in keeping him warm, sometimes several days, till the storm is past, the roads are passable, and he is able to pursue his journey again.

TOMMY.

I could not have conceived it possible, that men should be able to struggle with so many hardships. But do not the poor people that inhabit these cold climates, quit them, whenever they can find an opportunity, and come to settle in those that are warmer?

MR. BARLOW.

Not in the least. When they hear that there are no seals to be caught in other countries, they say that they must be wretched indeed, and much inferior to their own. Besides, they have in general so great a contempt for all the Europeans, that they have no inclination to visit the countries which they inhabit.

TOMMY.

How can that be? How can a parcel of wretched, ignorant savages, despise men that are so much superior to themselves?

MR. BARLOW.

This it not what they are quite so well convinced of. The Greenlanders, for instance, see that the Europeans that visit them, are much inferior to themselves in the art of managing a boat, or catching seals; in short, in every thing which they find most useful to support life. For this reason they consider

them all with very great contempt, and look upon them as little better than barbarians.

TOMMY.

That is very impertinent indeed, and I should like to convince them of their folly.

MR. BARLOW.

Why, do not you look upon yourself as much superior to your black servants, and have I not often heard you express great contempt for them?

TOMMY.

I do not despise them now, so much as I used to do. Besides, Sir, I only think myself something better, because I have been brought up like a gentleman.

MR. BARLOW.

A gentleman! I have never exactly understood what a gentleman is, according to your notions.

TOMMY.

Why, Sir, when a person is not brought up to work, and has several people to wait upon him, like my father and mother, then he is a gentleman.

MR. BARLOW.

And then he has a right to despise others, has he?

TOMMY.

I do not say that, Sir, neither. But he is, however, superior to them.

MR. BARLOW.

Superior in what? In the art of cultivating the ground to raise food, and making clothes or houses?

TOMMY.

No, Sir, not that; for gentlemen never plough the ground or build houses.

MR. BARLOW.

Is he then superior in knowledge? Were you, who have been brought up a gentleman, superior to all the rest of the world when you came here?

TOMMY.

To be sure, Sir, when I came here, I did not know as much as I do now.

MR. BARLOW.

If then you, when you knew nothing and could do nothing, thought yourself superior to the rest of the world, why should you wonder that men, who really excel others in those things which they see absolutely necessary, should have the same good opinion of themselves? Were you to be in Greenland, for instance, how would you prove your own superiority and importance?

TOMMY.

I would tell them that I had always been well brought up at home.

MR. BARLOW.

That they would not believe; they would say, that they saw you were totally unable to do any thing useful; to guide a boat; to swim the seas; to procure yourself the least sustenance; so that you would perish with hunger, if they did not charitably afford you now and then a bit of whale or seal. And as to your being a gentleman, they would not understand the word; nor would they comprehend, why one man who is naturally as good as his fellow creature, should submit to the caprice of another, and obey him.

“Indeed,” answered Tommy, “I begin to think

that I am not so much better than others, as I used to do."

MR. BARLOW.

The more you encourage that thought, the more likely you are to acquire real superiority and excellence; for great and generous minds are less exposed to that ridiculous vanity, than weak and childish ones.

A few evenings after this conversation, when the night was remarkably clear, Mr. Barlow called his two pupils into the garden, where there was a long hollow tube suspended upon a frame. Mr. Barlow then placed Tommy upon a chair, and bade him look through it; which he had scarcely done, when he cried out, "What an extraordinary sight is this!" "What is the matter?" said Mr. Barlow. "I see," replied Tommy, "what I should take for the moon, were it not a great many times bigger, and so near to me that I can almost touch it." "What you see," answered Mr. Barlow, smiling, "is the moon itself. This glass has indeed the power of making it appear to your eye, as it would do, could you approach a great deal nearer: but still it is nothing but the moon; and from this single experiment you may judge of the different size which the sun and all the other heavenly bodies would appear to have, if you could advance a great deal nearer to them."

Tommy was delighted with this new spectacle: the moon, (he said,) viewed in this manner, was the most glorious sight he had ever seen in his life. "And I protest," added he, "it seems to be shaded in such a manner, that it almost resembles land and water." "What you say," answered Mr. Barlow, "is by no

means unreasonable: the moon is a very large body, and may be, for aught we know, inhabited like the earth."

Tommy was more and more astonished at the introduction of all these new ideas; but what he was particularly inquisitive about was, to know the reason of this extraordinary change in the appearance of objects, only by looking through a hollow tube with a bit of glass fixed into it. "All this," replied Mr. Barlow, "I will, if you desire it, one day explain to you; but it is rather too long and difficult to undertake it at the present moment: when you are a little further advanced in some of the things which you are now studying, you will comprehend me better. However, before we retire to-night, I will show you something more, which will perhaps equally surprise you."

They then returned to the house, and Mr. Barlow, who had prepared every thing for his intended exhibition, led Tommy into a room, where he observed nothing but a lantern upon the floor, and a white sheet hung up against the wall. Tommy laughed, and said he did not see any thing very curious in all that. "Well," said Mr. Barlow, "perhaps I may surprise you yet, before I have done; let us at least light up the lantern, that you may see a little clearer."

Mr. Barlow then lighted a lamp, which was within the lantern, and extinguished all the other candles; and Tommy was instantly struck with astonishment, to see a gigantic figure of a man leading along a large bear, appear upon the wall and glide

slowly along the sheet. As he was admiring this wonderful sight, a large monkey, dressed up in the habit of a man, appeared, and followed the bear; after him came an old woman trundling a barrow of fruit; and then two boys, who however were as big as men, that seemed to be fighting as they passed. Tommy could hardly find words to express his pleasure and admiration; and he entreated Mr. Barlow, in the most earnest manner, to explain to him the reason of all these wonderful sights. "At present," said Mr. Barlow, "you are not sufficiently advanced to comprehend the explanation. However, thus much I will inform you, that both the wonderful tube which showed you the moon so much larger than you ever saw it before, and this curious exhibition of to-night, and a variety of others, which I will hereafter show you, if you desire it, depend entirely upon such a little bit of glass as this." Mr. Barlow then put into his hand a small, round piece of glass, which resembled the figure of a globe on both sides: "It is by looking through such pieces of glass as this," said he, "and by arranging them in a particular manner, that we are enabled to perform all these wonders." "Well," said Tommy, "I never could have believed, that simply looking through a bit of glass, could have made such a difference in the appearance of things." "And yet," said Mr. Barlow, looking at a thing through water alone, is capable of producing the greatest change, as I will immediately prove to you." Mr. Barlow then took a small earthen basin, and putting a half-crown at the bottom, desired Tommy gradually to go back, still looking at the basin, till

he could distinguish the piece of money no longer. Tommy accordingly retired, and presently cried out, that he had totally lost sight of the money: "Then," said Mr. Barlow, "I will enable you to see it, merely by putting water into it." So he gradually poured water into the basin, till, to the new astonishment of Tommy, he found that he could plainly see the half-crown, which was before invisible.

Tommy was vastly delighted with all these wonderful experiments, and declared, that from this time forward, he would never rest till he had made himself acquainted with every thing curious in every branch of knowledge.

"I remember reading a story," added Mr. Barlow, "where a telescope, for that is the name of the glass which brings distant objects so much nearer to the eye, was used to a very excellent purpose indeed." "Pray, how was that?" said Tommy. "In some part of Africa," said Mr. Barlow, "there was a prince who was attacked by one of his most powerful neighbours, and almost driven out of his dominions. He had done every thing he could to defend himself, with the greatest bravery; but was overpowered by the numbers of his enemy, and defeated in several battles. At length he was reduced to a very small number of brave men, who still accompanied him, and had taken possession of a steep and difficult hill, which he determined to defend to the last extremity; while the enemy was in possession of all the country around. While he lay with his little army in this disagreeable situation, he was visited by a European, whom he had formerly received and

treated with the greatest kindness. To this man the unfortunate prince made his complaints, telling him, that he was exposed every instant to be attacked by his stronger foe; and though he had taken his resolution, he expected nothing but to be cut off with all his army. The European happened to have with him one of these curious glasses, which had not been long invented in Europe, and was totally unknown in that part of the globe; and he told the prince, his friend, that he would soon inform him of what his enemy was doing; and then he might take his own measures with the greater confidence. So he produced his glass, and after having adjusted it, turned it towards the enemy's camp, which he considered some time with great attention; and then told his friend, that he might at least be easy for the present; for the enemy's general was at that instant thinking only of a great feast, which he was giving to the officers of his army. "How is it possible," replied the prince, "that you can pretend to discover so accurately what is done in yonder camp? My eyes, I think, are at least as good as yours, and yet the distance is so great, that I can discover nothing distinctly." The European then desired his friend to look through the telescope; which he had no sooner done, than he rose in great trepidation, and was going to mount his horse; for the spectacle was so new to him, that he imagined the enemy was close to him, and that nothing remained but to stand upon his defence. The European could not help smiling at this mistake, and after he had with some difficulty removed his panic, by explaining the won-

derful powers of the glass, he prevailed upon him to be quiet. But the unexpected terror which his telescope had excited, inspired him with a sudden thought, which he determined to improve to the advantage of the besieged prince. Acquainting him, therefore, with his intention, he desired him to draw out all his men in their military array, and to let them descend the mountain slowly, clashing their arms and waving their swords as they marched. He then mounted a horse and rode to the enemy's camp, where he no sooner arrived, than he desired to be instantly introduced to the general. He found him sitting in his tent, carousing in the midst of his officers, and thinking of nothing less than an engagement. When he approached, he thus accosted him: "I am come, great warrior, as a friend, to acquaint you with a circumstance that is absolutely necessary to the safety of yourself and army." "What is that?" said the general, with some surprise. "At this instant," replied the European, "while you are indulging yourself in festivity, the enemy, who has lately been reinforced with a large body of his most valiant troops, is advancing to attack you; and even now has almost penetrated to your camp. I have here, (added he,) a wonderful glass, the composition of which is only known in Europe; and, if you will condescend to look through it for a moment, it will convince you that all I say is truth."

Saying this, he directed his eye to the telescope, which the general had no sooner looked into, than he was struck with consternation and affright. He saw the prince, whom he had long considered as lying at

his mercy, advancing with his army in excellent order, and, as he imagined, close to his camp. He could even discern the menacing air of the soldiers, and the brandishing of their swords as they moved. His officers, who thronged round him to know the cause of his sudden fright, had no sooner peeped into the wonderful glass, than they were all affected in the same manner. Their heads had been already disturbed by their intemperance; and therefore, without waiting to consult, they rushed in a panic out of their tents, mounted their swiftest horses, and fled away, without staying to see the consequences. The rest of the army, who had seen the consternation of their leaders, and had heard that the enemy was advancing to destroy them, were struck with an equal panic, and instantly followed the example: so that the whole plain was covered with men and horses, which made all possible haste towards their own country, without thinking of resistance. Thus was an immense army dispersed in an instant, and the besieged prince delivered from his danger, by the address and superior knowledge of a single man."

"Thus you see," added Mr. Barlow, "of how much use a superiority of knowledge is frequently capable of making individuals. But a still more famous instance is that of Archimedes, one of the most celebrated mathematicians of his time. He, when the city of Syracuse was besieged by the Romans, defended it for a long time, by the surprising machines he invented, in such a manner that they began to despair of taking it." "Do, pray," said Tommy, "tell me that story." "No," answered Mr. Barlow,

“it is now time to retire; and you may at any time read all the particulars of this extraordinary siege, in Plutarch’s life of Marcellus.”

And now the time approached, when Mr. Barlow was accustomed to invite the greater part of the poor of his parish to an annual dinner. He had a large hall, which was almost filled with men, women, and children: a cheerful fire blazed in the chimney, and a prodigious table was placed in the middle, for the company to dine upon. Mr. Barlow himself received his guests, and conversed with them about the state of their families and their affairs. Those that were industrious, and brought their children up to labour, instructing them in the knowledge of their duty, and preserving them from bad impressions, were sure to meet with his encouragement and commendations. Those who had been ill, he assisted with such little necessaries, as tended to alleviate their pains, and diffuse a gleam of cheerfulness over their sufferings. “How hard,” he would say, “is the lot of the poor, when they are afflicted with sickness! How intolerable do we find the least bodily disorder, even though we possess every convenience which can mitigate its violence! Not all the dainties which can be collected from all the elements, the warmth of downy beds and silken couches, the attendance of obsequious dependants, are capable of making us bear with common patience the commonest disease. How pitiable then must be the state of a fellow-creature, who is at once tortured by bodily suffering, and destitute of every circumstance which can alleviate it! who sees around him a family that are not only incapable of assisting

their parent, but destined to want the common necessities of life, the moment he intermits his daily labours! How indispensable then is the obligation, which should continually impel the rich to exert themselves in assisting their fellow-creatures, and rendering that condition of life which we all avoid, less dreadful to those who must support it always!"

Acting from such principles as these, Mr. Barlow was the common friend of all the species. Whatever his fortune would allow him to perform, he never refused to all who stood in need of his assistance. But there is yet a duty, which he thought of more importance than the mere distribution of property to the needy—the encouragement of industry and virtue among the poor, and giving them juster notions of morals and religion. "If we have a dog," he would say, "we refuse neither pains nor expence to train him up to hunting; if we have a horse, we send him to an experienced rider to be bitted; but our own species seems to be the only animal which is entirely exempted from our care." When he rode about the country, he used to consider with admiration, the splendid stables which the great construct for the reception of their horses, their ice-houses, temples, hermitages, grottos, and all the apparatus of modern vanity. "All this," he would say, "is an unequivocal proof that the gentleman loves himself, and grudges no expence that can gratify his vanity; but I would now wish to see what he has done for his fellow-creatures, what are the proofs that he has given of public spirit or humanity; the wrongs which he

has redressed, the miseries he has alleviated, the abuses which he has endeavoured to remove."

When he was told of the stubbornness and ingratitude of the poor, he used to say, "that he believed it without difficulty; for they were men in common with their superiors, and therefore must share in some of their vices: but if the interests of humanity were half as dear to us as the smallest article that pleases our palate or flatters our vanity, we should not so easily abandon them in disgust." Mr. Barlow happened once to be in company with a lady, with whom he was upon a footing of intimacy, who was talking in this manner. "Nobody," she said, "had greater feeling than herself, or was more desirous of assisting her fellow-creatures. When she first came into the country, she had endeavoured to relieve all the misery she heard of; she had given victuals to one, physic to a second, and clothes to a third; but she had met with so much ill-behaviour and ingratitude in return, that she had long been obliged to resign all her charitable intentions, and abandon the poor to their fate." All the company assented to a doctrine that was so very conformable to their own practice and inclinations, and agreed that nothing could be more injudicious than any attempts to be charitable.

Some little time after this conversation, cards were produced, and the lady who had been so eloquent against the poor, sat down to whist, at which she played for several hours, with equal ignorance and ill-fortune. When the party was over, she was complaining to Mr. Barlow of her losses, and added, that she scarcely ever in her life, had sat down to

cards with better success." "I wonder, madam," replied Mr. Barlow, "you do not then give them up entirely." "Alas!" answered the lady, "I have often made this resolution; but I have never had the courage to keep it." "Indeed, madam," said Mr. Barlow, "it is impossible you can be deficient in courage; and therefore you wrong your own character." "You do me too much honour," said the lady, "by your good opinion; but whoever has given you this information is deceived." "I had it only from yourself, madam." "From me, Sir? When did I ever give you such a character of myself?" "Just now, madam, when you declared, that upon the bad success of half a dozen experiments, you had resolved never more to be charitable, and had kept the resolution ever since. I can hardly conceive that your love of cards is so much greater than that of your duty and religion; and therefore, my dear madam, I must repeat it, that you certainly undervalue your own fortitude."

Such were the opinions of Mr. Barlow in respect to the poor; and therefore, instead of widening the distance which fortune has placed between one part of mankind and another, he was continually intent upon bringing the two classes nearer together. Poverty has in itself so many hardships and disagreeable circumstances, that we need not increase their number by unnecessary pride and insolence. The distinctions of rank may indeed be necessary to the government of a populous country; but it is for the good of the whole, not of individuals, that they can have any just claim to be admitted; and therefore a good man will

insist upon them no more than is absolutely necessary for that purpose. On the contrary, whatever may be his rank or importance, he will plainly prove, by the courtesy and benevolence of his manners, that he laments the necessity of his own elevation, and, instead of wishing to mount still higher, would willingly descend nearer to an equality with his fellow-creatures.

Tommy was very much diverted with the ceremonies of this festal day. He had lost a great part of his West-Indian pride, during his residence with Mr. Barlow, and had contracted many acquaintances among the families of the poor. After the example of Mr. Barlow, he condescended to go about from one to the other, and make enquiries about their families; nor was he a little gratified with the extreme respect with which he found himself treated, both upon the account of Mr. Barlow, and the reputation of his own liberality. Thus did the morning pass away in the most agreeable and auspicious manner; but after dinner an unexpected incident arrived, which clouded all the merriment of the unfortunate Tommy Merton.

Mr. Barlow happened to have a large Newfoundland dog, equally famous for his good-nature and his love of the water. With this dog Tommy had long been forming an acquaintance; and he used to divert himself with throwing sticks into the water, which Cæsar would instantly bring out in his mouth, however great might be the distance. Tommy had been fired with the description of the Kamtschatkan dogs, and their method of drawing sledges, and meditated an enterprise of this nature upon Cæsar. This very day, finding himself unusually at leisure, he chose for

the execution of his project. He therefore furnished himself with some rope and a kitchen chair, which he destined for his vehicle instead of a sledge. He then inveigled Cæsar into a large yard behind the house, and extending the chair flat upon the ground, fastened him to it with great care and ingenuity. Cæsar, who did not understand the new purpose to which he was going to be applied, suffered himself to be harnessed without opposition; and Tommy mounted triumphantly his seat, with a whip in his hand, and began his operations. A crowd of little boys, the sons of the labourers within, now gathered round the young gentleman, and by their admiration very much increased his ardour to distinguish himself. Tommy began to use the common expressions which he had heard coachmen practise to their horses, and smacked his whip with all the confidence of an experienced charioteer. Cæsar meanwhile, who did not comprehend this language, began to be a little impatient, and expressed his uneasiness by making several bounds, and rearing up like a restive horse. This added very much to the diversion of the spectators, and Tommy, who considered his honour as materially concerned in achieving the adventure, began to grow a little more warm; and, proceeding from one experiment to another, at length applied a pretty severe lash to the hinder part of his steed. This Cæsar resented so much, that he instantly set off at three quarters speed, and dragged the chair, with the driver upon it, at a prodigious rate. Tommy now looked round with an infinite air of triumph, and kept his seat with surprising address and firmness. Unfor-

unfortunately, there happened to be at no great distance a large horse-pond, which went shelving down to the depth of three or four feet. Hither, by a kind of natural instinct, the affrighted Cæsar ran, when he found he could not disengage himself from his tormentor; while Tommy, who now began to repent of his success, endeavoured to pacify and restrain him. But all his expostulations were vain; for Cæsar precipitately rushed into the pond, and in an instant plunged into the middle, with his charioteer behind him. The crowd of spectators had now a fresh subject of diversion; and all their respect for Master Tommy could not hinder them from bursting into shouts of derision. The unfortunate hero was equally discomposed at the unmannerly exultation of his attendants, and at his own ticklish situation. But he did not long wait for the catastrophe of his adventure; for after a little floundering about in the pond, Cæsar, by a vigorous exertion, overturned the chair, and Tommy came roughly into the water. To add to his misfortune, the pond was at that time neither ice nor water: for a sudden thaw had commenced the day before, accompanied with a copious fall of snow. Tommy, therefore, as soon as he had recovered his footing, floundered on through mud and water, and pieces of floating ice, like some amphibious animal, to the shore. Sometimes his feet slipped, and down he tumbled; then he struggled up again, shaking the water from his hair and clothes; now his feet stuck fast in the mud, and now by a desperate effort he disengaged them with the loss of both his shoes; thus

labouring on with infinite pain and difficulty, he reached the land.

The whole troop of spectators were now incapable of stifling their laughter, which broke forth in such redoubled peals, that the unfortunate hero was irritated to an extreme of rage; so that forgetting his own sufferings and necessities, as soon as he had struggled to the shore, he fell upon them in a fury, and dealt his blows so liberally on every side, that he put the whole company to flight. Tommy was now in the situation of a warrior that pursues a routed army. Dismay and terror scattered all his little associates a hundred different ways; while passion and revenge animated him to the pursuit, and made him forgetful of the wetness of his clothes and the uncomfortableness of his situation. Whatever unfortunate boy came within his reach, was sure to be unmercifully cuffed and pommelled; for in the fury with which he felt himself inspired, he did not wait to consider the exact rules of justice. While Tommy was thus revenging the affronts he imagined he had received, and chasing the vanquished about the court, the unusual noise and uproar which ensued, reached the ears of Mr. Barlow, and brought him to the door. He could hardly help laughing at the rueful figure of his friend, with the water dropping from every part of his body in copious streams, and at the rage which seemed to animate him in spite of his disaster. It was with some difficulty that Tommy could compose himself enough to give Mr. Barlow an account of his misfortunes; which, when he had heard, he immediately led him into the house, and advised him to un-

dress and go to bed. He then brought him some warm, diluting liquors, by which means he avoided all the bad effects which might otherwise have arisen from so complete a drenching.

The next day, Mr. Barlow laughed at Tommy in his usual good-natured manner, and asked him if he intended to ride out in the Kamtschatkan manner; adding, however, that he should be afraid to attend him, as he had the habit of beating his companions. Tommy was a little confounded at this insinuation, but replied, that he should not have been so provoked, if they had not laughed at his misfortunes; and he thought it very hard to be wetted and ridiculed both. "But," replied Mr. Barlow, "did their noise or laughter do you any great damage, that you endeavoured to return it so roughly?" Tommy answered, that he must own it did not do him any hurt, or give him any pain. "Why then," said Mr. Barlow, "I do not see the justice of your returning it in that manner." "But," said Tommy, "it is so provoking to be laughed at!" "There are two ways of remedying that," replied Mr. Barlow; "either by not doing such things as will expose you to ridicule, or by learning to bear it with a little more patience." "But," said Tommy, "I do not think that any body can bear it with patience." "All the world," said Mr. Barlow, "are not quite so passionate as you are. It is not long ago, that you were speaking of the poor Greenlanders with great contempt, and fancying them much inferior to yourself; yet those poor barbarians, as you called them, that live upon fish, and are not brought up like gentlemen's sons,

are capable of giving you a lesson, that would be of the greatest service, if you would observe it." "What is that, Sir?" enquired Tommy. "They are brought up to so much moderation and self-command," said Mr. Barlow, "that they never give way to those sudden impulses of passion that are common among the Europeans; and when they observe their violent gestures, their angry words, their countenances inflamed with wrath, they feel for them the greatest contempt, and say, they must have been very badly educated. As to themselves, if any person thinks himself ill-used by another, without putting himself into any passion upon the occasion, he defies his foe to meet him at a particular time, before all their mutual acquaintance.

TOMMY.

But then I suppose they fight, and that is being as passionate as I was.

MR. BARLOW.

I am sorry that you, who pretend to have been so well brought up, should have recourse to the example of the Greenlanders, in order to justify your own conduct; but in this case you are mistaken, for the barbarians are a great deal wiser than young gentlemen. The person who thinks himself injured, does indeed challenge his antagonist; but it is to a very different sort of combat from what you imagine. Both parties appear at the appointed time, and each is surrounded with a company of his particular friends. The place where they assemble is generally the middle of one of their large huts, that all the persons of their society may be impartial spectators of

their contest. When they are thus convened, the champion, who by agreement is to begin, steps forward into the middle of the circle, and entertains them with a song, or speech, which he has before meditated. In this performance, he generally contrives to throw all the ridicule he is able upon his antagonist; and his satire is applauded by his own party, and excites universal merriment among the audience. When he has sung or declaimed himself out of breath, it is the turn of his rival to begin; who goes on in the same manner, answering all the satire that has been thrown upon him, and endeavouring to win the laughs over to his own side. In this manner do the combatants go on, alternately reciting their compositions against each other, till the memory or invention of one of them fails, and he is obliged to yield the victory to his rival. After this public specimen of their ingenuity, the two champions generally forget all their animosities, and are cordially reconciled.

“This,” added Mr. Barlow, “appears to me to be a much better method of answering ridicule than by giving way to passion and resentment, and beating those that displease us: and one of these honest Greenlanders would be as much ashamed of such a sudden transport of anger, as a Kamtschatkan traveller would be, of managing his dogs as ill as you did yesterday.”

And now the time arrived, when Tommy was by appointment to go home and spend some time with his parents. Mr. Barlow had been long afraid of this

visit, as he knew he would meet a great deal of company there, who would give him impressions of a very different nature from what he had with so much assiduity been labouring to excite. However, the visit was unavoidable, and Mr. Merton sent so pressing an invitation for Harry to accompany his friend, after having obtained the consent of his father, that Mr. Barlow, with much regret, took leave of both his pupils. Harry, from the experience he had formerly acquired of polite life, had no great inclination for the expedition; however, his temper was too easy and obliging to raise any objections, and the real affection he now entertained for Master Merton, rendered him less averse than he would otherwise have been.

When they arrived at Mr. Merton's, they were introduced into a crowded drawing-room, full of the most elegant company which that part of the country afforded; among whom were several young gentlemen and ladies of different ages, who had been purposely invited to spend their holidays with Master Merton. As soon as Master Merton entered, every tongue was let loose in his praise; he was grown, he was improved, he was such a charming boy; his eyes, his hair, his teeth, his every feature was the admiration of all the ladies. Thrice did he make the circle, in order to receive the congratulations of the company, and to be introduced to the young ladies. As to Harry, he had the good fortune to be taken notice of by nobody except Mr. Merton, who received him with great cordiality. A lady, however, that sat by Mrs. Merton, asked her in a whisper, which was loud enough to be heard all over the room, whether

that was the little plough-boy which she had heard Mr. Barlow was attempting to breed up like a gentleman. Mrs. Merton answered it was. "I protest," said the lady, "I should have thought so, by his plebeian look and vulgar air. But I wonder, my dear madam, that you will suffer your son, who, without flattery, is one of the most accomplished children I ever saw in my life, with quite the air of fashion, to keep such company. Are you not afraid that Master Merton should insensibly contract bad habits, and a grovelling way of thinking? For my own part, as I think a good education is a thing of the utmost consequence in life, I have spared no pains to give my dear Matilda every possible advantage." "Indeed," replied Mrs. Merton, "one may see the excellence of her education, in every thing that Miss Matilda does. She plays most divinely upon the harpsichord, talks French even better than she does English, and draws in the style of a master. Indeed, I think that last figure of the naked gladiator, the finest thing I ever saw in my life."

While this conversation was going on in one part of the room, a young lady observing that nobody seemed to take the least notice of Harry, advanced towards him with the greatest affability, and began to enter into conversation with him. This young lady's name was Simmons: her father and mother had been two of the most respectable people in the country, according to the old style of English gentry; but having died while she was young, the care of her had devolved upon an uncle, who was a man of sense and

benevolence, but a very great humorist. This gentleman had such peculiar ideas of female character, that he waged war with most of the polite and modern accomplishments. As one of the first blessings of life, according to his notions, was health, he endeavoured to prevent that sickly delicacy, which is considered as so great an ornament in fashionable life, by a more robust and hardy education. His niece was accustomed, from her earliest years, to plunge into the cold bath at every season of the year, to rise by candle-light in winter, to ride a dozen miles upon a trotting horse, or to walk as many, even with the hazard of being splashed or soiling her clothes. By this mode of education, Miss Sukey, for so she had the misfortune to be named, acquired an excellent character, accompanied, however, with some dispositions, which disqualified her almost as much as Harry for fashionable life. She was acquainted with all the best authors in our own language, nor was she ignorant of those in French; although she could not speak a word of the language. Her uncle, who was a man of sense and knowledge, had besides instructed her in several parts of knowledge, which rarely fall to the lot of ladies; such as the established laws of nature, and a small degree of geometry. She was, besides, brought up to every species of household employment, which is now exploded by ladies in every rank and station, as mean and vulgar; and taught to believe, that domestic economy is a point of the utmost consequence to every woman that intends to be a wife or mother. As to music, though Miss Simmons had a very agreeable voice, and could sing

several simple songs in a very pleasing manner, she was entirely ignorant of it; her uncle used to say, that human life is not long enough to throw away so much time upon the science of making a noise. Nor would he permit her to learn French, although he understood it himself; women, he thought, are not birds of passage, that are to be eternally changing their place of abode. "I have never seen any good," would he say, "from the importation of foreign manners; every virtue may be learned and practised at home; and it is only because we do not choose to have either virtue or religion among us, that so many adventurers are yearly sent out to smuggle foreign graces. As to various languages, I do not see the necessity of them for a woman. My niece is to marry an Englishman, and to live in England. To what purpose then should I labour to take off the difficulty of conversing with foreigners, and to promote her intercourse with barbers, valets, dancing-masters, and adventurers of every description, who are continually doing us the honour to come amongst us? As to the French nation, I know and esteem it on many accounts; but I am very doubtful whether the English will ever gain much by adopting either their manners or their government; and when respectable foreigners choose to visit us, I see no reason why they should not take the trouble of learning the language of the country."

Such had been the education of Miss Simmons, who was the only one of all the genteel company at Mr. Merton's, that thought Harry deserving the least attention. This young lady, who possessed an

uncommon degree of natural benevolence of character, came up to him, and addressed him in such a manner as set him perfectly at his ease. Harry was destitute of the artificial graces of society; but he possessed that natural politeness and good-nature, without which all artificial graces are the most disgusting things in the world. Harry had an understanding naturally strong; and Mr Barlow, while he had with the greatest care preserved him from all false impressions, had taken great pleasure in cultivating the faculties of his mind. Harry, indeed, never said any of those brilliant things which render a boy the darling of the ladies; he had not that vivacity, or rather impertinence, which frequently passes for wit with superficial people: but he paid the greatest attention to what was said to him, and made the most judicious observations upon subjects he understood. For this reason, Miss Simmons, although much older and more improved, received great satisfaction from conversing with him, and thought little Harry infinitely more agreeable and judicious than any of the smart young gentlemen she had hitherto seen at Mr. Merton's.

But now the company was summoned to the important business of dinner. Harry could not help sighing, when he reflected upon what he had to undergo; however, he determined to bear it with all imaginable fortitude, for the sake of his friend Tommy. The dinner indeed was, if possible, more dreadful than any thing he had before undergone; so many fine gentlemen and fine ladies; so many powdered servants to stand behind their chairs; such an appa-

ratus of dishes which Harry had never tasted before, and which almost made him sick when he did taste; so many removes; such pomp and solemnity about what seemed the easiest thing in the world; that Harry could not help envying the condition of his father's labourers, who, when they are hungry, can sit at their ease under a hedge, and make a dinner, without plates, table-cloths, or compliments. In the meantime, his friend Tommy was received amid the circle of the ladies, and attended to as a prodigy of wit and ingenuity. Harry could not help being surprised at this: his affection for his friend was totally unmingled with the meanness of jealousy, and he received the sincerest pleasure from every improvement which Tommy had made; however, he had never discovered in him any of those surprising talents, and when he could catch any thing that Tommy said, it appeared to him rather inferior to his usual method of conversation: however, as so many fine ladies were of a different opinion, he took it for granted that he must be mistaken. But if Harry's opinion of his friend's abilities was not much improved by this exhibition, it was not so with Tommy. The repeated assurances which he received that he was indeed a little prodigy, began to convince him that he really was so. When he considered the company he came from, he found that infinite injustice had been done to his merit; for at Mr. Barlow's he was frequently contradicted, and obliged to give a reason for what he said; but here, in order to be admired, he had nothing to do but talk; whether he had any meaning or not, his

auditors always found either wit, or sense, or a most entertaining sprightliness in all he said.

Nor was Mrs. Merton herself deficient in bestowing marks of admiration upon her son. To see him before improve in health, in understanding, in virtue, had given her a pleasurable sensation, for she was by no means destitute of good dispositions; but to see him shine with such transcendent brightness, before such excellent judges and in so polite a company, inspired her with raptures she had never felt before. Indeed, in consequence of this success, the young gentleman's volubility improved so much, that, before the dinner was over, he seemed disposed to engross the whole conversation to himself; and Mr. Merton, who did not quite relish the sallies of his son so much as his wife, was once or twice obliged to interpose and check him in his career. This Mrs. Merton thought very hard, and all the ladies, after they had retired into the drawing-room, agreed, that his father would certainly spoil his temper by such improper contradiction. As to little Harry, he had not the good fortune to please the greater number of the ladies; they observed that he was awkward and ungentle, and had a heavy, clownish look; he was also silent and reserved, and had not said a single agreeable thing: if Mr. Barlow chose to keep a school for carters and threshers, nobody would hinder him; but it was not proper to introduce such vulgar people to the sons of persons of fashion. It was therefore agreed, that Mr. Barlow ought either to send little Harry home to his friends, or to be no more honoured with the company of Master Merton. Indeed, one of the ladies hinted

that Mr. Barlow himself was but an odd kind of man, who never went to assemblies, and played upon no kind of instrument. "Why," answered Mrs. Merton, "to tell the truth, I was not over fond of the scheme: Mr. Barlow, to be sure, though a very good, is a very odd kind of man; however, as he is so disinterested, and would never receive the least present from us, I doubt whether we could with propriety insist upon his turning little Sandford out of the house." "If that is the case, madam," answered Mrs. Compton, for that was the name of the lady, "I think it would be infinitely better to remove Master Merton, and place him in some polite seminary; where he might acquire a knowledge of the world, and make genteel connexions. This will be always the greatest advantage to a young gentleman, and will prove of the most essential service to him in life. For though a person has all the merit in the world, without such acquaintance it never will push him forward, or enable him to make a figure. This is the plan which I have always pursued with Augustus and Matilda; I think I may say, not entirely without success; for they have both the good fortune to have formed the most brilliant acquaintances. As to Augustus, he is so intimate with young Lord Squander, who you know is possessed of the greatest parliamentary interest, that I think his fortune is as good as made."

Miss Simmons, who was present at this refined and wise conversation, could not help looking with so much significance at this mention of Lord Squander,

that Mrs. Compton coloured a little, and asked with some warmth, whether she knew any thing of that young nobleman. "Why, madam," answered the young lady, "what I know is very little; but if you desire me to inform you, it is my duty to speak the truth." "Oh! to be sure, Miss," replied Mrs. Compton, a little angrily; "we all know that your judgment and knowledge of the world are superior to what any body else can boast; and therefore, I shall be infinitely obliged to you for any information you may be pleased to give." "Indeed, madam," answered the young lady, "I have very little of either to boast, nor am I personally acquainted with the nobleman you are talking of; but I have a cousin, a very good boy, who is at the same public school with his lordship, who has given me such a character of him as does not much prepossess me in his favour." "And what may this wise cousin of yours have said of his lordship?" "Only, madam, that he is one of the worst boys in the whole school: that he has neither genius, nor application for any thing that becomes his rank and situation: that he has no taste for any thing but gaming, horse-racing, and the most contemptible amusements: that, though his allowance is so large, he is eternally running in debt with every body who will trust him; and that he has broken his word so often, that nobody has the least confidence in what he says. Added to this, I have heard that he is so haughty, tyrannical, and overbearing, that nobody can long preserve his friendship, without the meanest flattery and subservience to all his vicious inclinations. And to finish all, that he is of so ungrateful a temper, that

he was never known to do an act of kindness to any one, or to care about any thing but himself." Here Miss Matilda could not help interposing with warmth: she said, "that his lordship had nothing in his character or manners that did not perfectly become a nobleman of the most elevated soul. Little, grovelling minds, indeed, which are always envious of their superiors, might give a disagreeable turn to the generous openness of this young nobleman's temper. That as to gaming and running in debt, they were so essential to a man of fashion, that nobody who was not born in the city, and oppressed by city prejudices, would think of making the least objection to them. She then made a panegyric upon his lordship's person, his elegant taste in dress, his new phaeton, his entertaining conversation, his extraordinary performance upon the violin; and concluded that, with such abilities and accomplishments, she did not doubt of one day seeing him at the head of the nation."

Miss Simmons had no desire of pushing the conversation any further, and the rest of the company coming into tea, the disquisition about Lord Squander finished. After tea, several of the young ladies were desired to amuse the company with music and singing: among the rest, Miss Simmons sang a little Scotch song, called Lochaber, in so artless, but sweet and pathetic a manner, that little Harry listened almost with tears in his eyes, though several of the other young ladies, by their significant looks and gestures, treated it with ineffable contempt. After this, Miss Matilda, who was allowed to be a perfect mistress of music, played and sung several celebrated

Italian airs. But as they were in a language totally unintelligible to him, Harry received very little pleasure, though all the rest of the company were in raptures. She then proceeded to play several pieces of music, which were allowed by all connoisseurs to require infinite skill to execute. The audience seemed all delighted, and either felt, or pretended to feel, inexpressible pleasure; even Tommy himself, though he did not know one note from another, had caught so much of the general enthusiasm, that he applauded as loud as the rest of the company: but Harry, whose temper was not quite so pliable, could not conceal the intolerable weariness that overpowered his senses during this long exhibition. He gaped, he yawned, he stretched, he even pinched himself, in order to keep his attention alive, but all in vain; the more Miss Matilda exercised her skill in playing pieces of the most difficult execution, the more did Harry's propensity to drowsiness increase. At length, the lateness of the hour, which much exceeded Harry's time of going to bed, conspiring with the opiate charms of music, he could resist no longer, but insensibly fell back upon his chair, fast asleep. This unfortunate accident was soon remarked by the rest of the company, and confirmed them very much in the opinion they had conceived of Harry's vulgarity; while he, in the mean time, enjoyed the most placid slumber, which was not dissipated till Miss Matilda had desisted from playing.

Thus was the first day passed at Mr. Merton's, very little to the satisfaction of Harry; the next, and the next after, was only a repetition of the same scene.

The little gentry, whose tastes and manners were totally different from his, had now imbibed a perfect contempt for Harry, and it was with great difficulty that they would condescend to treat him even with common civility. In this laudable behaviour they were very much confirmed by Master Compton and Master Mash. Master Compton was reckoned a very genteel boy; though all his gentility consisted in a pair of buckles so big that they almost crippled him; in a slender, emaciated figure, and a look of consummate impudence. He had almost finished his education at a public school, where he had learned every vice and folly which is commonly taught at such places, without the least improvement either of his character or his understanding. Master Mash was the son of a neighbouring gentleman, who had considerably impaired his fortune by an inordinate love of horse-racing. Having been from his infancy accustomed to no other conversation than about winning and losing money, he had acquired the idea, that to bet successfully was the summit of all human ambition. He had been almost brought up in the stable, and therefore had imbibed the greatest interest about horses; not from any real affection for that noble animal, but merely because he considered them as engines for the winning of money. He too was now improving his talents by a public education, and longed impatiently for the time when he should be set free from all restraint, and allowed to display the superiority of his genius at Ascot and Newmarket. These two young gentleman had conceived the most violent dislike to Harry, and lost no occasion of say-

ing or doing every thing they had in their power to mortify him. To Tommy they were in the contrary extreme, and omitted no opportunity of rendering themselves agreeable. Nor was it long before their forward, vivacious manners, accompanied with a knowledge of many of those gay scenes which acted forcibly upon Tommy's imagination, began to render their conversation highly agreeable. They talked to him about public diversions, about celebrated actresses, about parties of pleasure and parties of mischief. Tommy began to feel himself introduced to a new train of ideas, and a wider range of conduct; he began to long for the time when he should share in the glories of robbing orchards, or insulting passengers, with impunity; but when he heard that little boys, scarcely bigger than himself, had often joined in the glorious project of forming open rebellions against their masters, or of disturbing a whole audience at a play-house, he panted for the time when he might have a chance of sharing in the fame of such achievements. By degrees he lost all regard for Mr. Barlow, and all affection for his friend Harry: at first, indeed, he was shocked at hearing Mr. Barlow mentioned with disrespect; but, becoming by degrees more callous to every good impression, he at last took infinite pleasure in seeing Master Mash; (who, though destitute of either wit or genius, had a great taste for mimicry,) take off the parson, in the middle of his sermon. Harry perceived and lamented this change in the manners of his friend; he sometimes took the liberty of remonstrating with him upon the subject, but was only answered with a contemptuous sneer:

and Master Mash, who happened once to be present, told him that he was a *monstrous bore*.

It happened, that while Harry was at Mr. Merton's house, there was a troop of strolling players at a neighbouring town. In order to divert the young gentry, Mr. Merton contrived they should make a party to see a play. They went accordingly, and Harry with the rest. Tommy, who now no longer condescended to take notice of his friend, was seated between his two inseparable companions. These young gentlemen first began to give specimens of their politeness, by throwing nuts and orange-peel upon the stage; and Tommy, who was resolved to profit by such an excellent example, threw nuts and orange-peel, with infinite satisfaction. As soon as the curtain drew up, and the actors appeared, all the rest of the audience observed a decent silence; but Mash and Compton, who were now determined to prove the superiority of their manners, began to talk so loud, and make so much noise, that it was impossible for any one near them to hear a word of the play. This also seemed amazingly fine to Tommy; and he too talked and laughed as loud as the rest. The subject of their conversation was the audience and the performers; neither of which these polite young gentlemen found bearable. The company was chiefly composed of the tradesmen of the town, and the inhabitants of the neighbouring country: this was a sufficient reason for these refined young gentlemen to speak of them in the most insufferable contempt. Every circumstance of their dress and appearance was criticised with such a minuteness of attention,

that Harry, who sat near, and, very much against his inclination, was witness to all that passed, began to imagine that his companions, instead of being brought up like the sons of gentlemen, had only studied under barbers and tailors; such amazing knowledge did they display in the history of buckles, buttons, and dressing of hair. As to the poor performers, they found them totally undeserving mercy; they were so shockingly awkward, so ill drest, so low-lived, and such detestable creatures, that it was impossible to bear them with any patience. Master Mash, who prided himself upon being a young gentleman of great spirit, was of opinion that they should kick up a riot, and demolish all the scenery. Tommy, indeed, did not very well understand what the expression meant, but he was so intimately persuaded of the merit and genius of his companions, that he agreed that it would be the properest thing in the world; and the proposal was accordingly made to the rest of the young gentlemen. But Harry, who had been silent all the time, could not help remonstrating at what appeared to him the greatest cruelty and injustice. "These poor people," said he, "are doing all they can to entertain us; is it not very unkind to treat them in return with scorn and contempt? If they could act better, even as well as those fine people you talk of in London, would they not willingly do it; and therefore, why should we be angry at them for what they cannot help? And as to cutting the scenes to pieces, or doing the house any damage, have we any more right to attempt it, than they would have to come into your father's dining-room, and

break the dishes to pieces, because they did not like the dinner?—While we are here, let us behave with good manners; and if we do not like their acting, it is our own faults if ever we come to see them again.”

This method of reasoning was not much relished by those to whom it was addressed, and it is uncertain how far they might have proceeded, had not a decent, plain-looking man, who had been long disturbed with the noise of these young gentry, at length taken the liberty of expostulating with them upon the subject. This freedom, or impertinence, as it was termed by Master Mash, was answered by him with so much rudeness, that the man, who was a neighbouring farmer, was obliged to reply in a higher strain. Thus did the altercation increase every minute, till Master Mash, who thought it an unpardonable affront that any one in an inferior station should presume to think or feel for himself, so far lost all command of his temper as to call the man a blackguard, and strike him upon the face. But the farmer, who possessed great strength and equal resolution, very deliberately laid hold of the young gentleman who had offered him the insult, and, without the smallest exertion; laid him sprawling upon the ground, at his full length under the benches, and setting his feet upon his body, told him that since he did not know how to sit quiet at a play, he would have the honour of teaching him to lie; and that if he offered to stir, he would trample him to pieces, a threat which it was very evident he could find no difficulty in executing. This unexpected incident struck a universal damp over the spirits of

the little gentry; and even Master Mash himself so far forgot his dignity, as to supplicate in a very submissive manner for a release: in this he was joined by all his companions, and Harry among the rest. "Well," said the farmer, "I never should have thought that a parcel of young gentlemen, as you call yourselves, would come into public to behave with so much rudeness: I am sure that there is ne'er a plough-boy at my house, but what would have shown more sense and manners: but since you are sorry for what has happened, I am very willing to make an end of the affair; more especially for the sake of this little master here, who has behaved with so much propriety, that I am sure he is a better gentleman than any of you, though he is not dressed so much like a monkey or a barber." With these words he suffered the crest-fallen Mash to rise, who crept from his place of confinement, with looks infinitely more expressive of mildness than he had brought with him: nor was the lesson lost upon the rest, for they behaved with the greatest decency during all the rest of the exhibition. However, Master Mash's courage began to rise as he went home, and found himself further from his formidable farmer; for he assured his companions, that if it had not been so vulgar a fellow, he would certainly call him out and pistol him.

The next day at dinner, Mr. Merton and the ladies, who had not accompanied the young gentlemen to the play, nor had yet heard of the misfortune which had ensued, were very inquisitive about the preceding night's entertainment. The young people

agreed that the performers were detestable, but that the play was a charming piece, full of wit and sentiment, and extremely improving: this play was called *The Marriage of Figaro*, and Master Compton had informed them, that it was amazingly admired by all the people of fashion in London. But Mr. Merton, who had observed that Harry was totally silent, at length insisted upon knowing his opinion upon the subject. "Why, Sir," answered Harry, "I am very little judge of these matters, for I never saw a play before in my life, and therefore I cannot tell whether it was acted well or ill; but as to the play itself, it seemed to me to be full of nothing but cheating and dissimulation, and the people who come in and out, do nothing but impose upon each other, and lie, and trick, and deceive. Were you or any gentleman to have such a parcel of servants, you would think them fit for nothing in the world; and therefore I could not help wondering, while the play was acting, that people would throw away so much of their time, upon sights that can do them no good; and send their children and their relations to learn fraud and insincerity."

Mr. Merton smiled at the honest bluntness of Harry; but several of the ladies, who had just been expressing an extravagant admiration of this piece, seemed to be not a little mortified; however, as they could not contradict the charges which Harry had brought against it, they thought it more prudent to be silent.

In the evening, it was proposed that all the little gentry should divert themselves with cards; and they

accordingly sat down to a game which is called Commerce. But Harry, who was totally ignorant of this accomplishment, desired to be excused; however, his friend, Miss Simmons, offered to teach him the game, which she assured him was so easy, that in three minutes he would be able to play as well as the rest. Harry, however, still continued to refuse, and at length confessed to Miss Simmons, that he had expended all his money the day before, and therefore was unable to furnish the stake which the rest deposited. "Don't let that disturb you," said she; "I will put down for you with a great deal of pleasure." "Madam," answered Harry, "I am very much obliged to you, I am sure; but Mr. Barlow has always forbidden me either to receive or borrow money of any body, for fear, in one case, I should become mercenary, or in the other, dishonest; and therefore, though there is nobody here whom I esteem more than yourself, I am obliged to refuse your offer." "Well," replied Miss Simmons, "that need not disturb you, for you shall play upon my account; and that you may do without any violation of your principles."

Thus was Harry, though with some reluctance, induced to sit down to cards with the rest. The game, indeed, he found no difficulty in learning, but he could not help remarking with wonder, the extreme solicitude which appeared in the face of all the players at every change of fortune. Even the young ladies, all but Miss Simmons, seemed to be equally sensible of the passion of gaining money with the rest; and some of them behaved with a degree of

asperity which quite astonished him. After several changes of fortune, it happened that Miss Simmons and Harry were the only remaining players; all the rest, by the laws of the game, had forfeited all pretensions to the stake, the property of which was clearly vested in these two, and one more deal was wanting to decide it. But Harry, with great politeness, rose from table, and told Miss Simmons, that, as he had only played upon her account, he was now no longer wanted, and that the whole undoubtedly belonged to her. Miss Simmons refused to take it; and when she found that Harry was not to be induced to play any more, she at last proposed to him to divide what was left. This also Harry declined, alleging that he had not the least title to any part. But Miss Simmons, who began to be uneasy at the observation which this extraordinary contest produced, told Harry that he would very much oblige her by taking his share of the money, and laying it out in any manner for her, that he judged best. "Upon this condition," answered Harry, "I will take it; and I think I know a method of laying it out, which you will not entirely disapprove."

The next day, as soon as breakfast was over, Harry disappeared; nor was he come back when the company were assembled to dinner. At length he came in, with a glow of health and exercise upon his face, and that disorder of dress which is produced by a long expedition. The young ladies eyed him with great contempt, which seemed a little to disconcert him; but Mr. Merton speaking to him with great good-humour, and making room for him to sit down, Harry

soon recovered from his confusion. In the evening, after a long conversation among the young people about public diversions, and plays, and dancers, and actors, they happened to mention the name of a celebrated performer, who at this time engaged the whole attention of the town. Master Compton, after expatiating with great enthusiasm upon the subject, added, that nothing was so fashionable as to make great presents to this person, in order to show the taste and elegance of the giver. He then proposed, that as so many young gentlemen and ladies were here assembled, they should set an example which would do them infinite honour, and probably be followed throughout the kingdom, of making a little collection among themselves, to buy a piece of plate, or a gold snuff-box, or some other trifle, to be presented in their name. He added, that though he could ill spare the money, having just laid out six guineas upon a new pair of buckles, he would contribute a guinea to so excellent a purpose, and that Masters Mash and Merton would do the same. This proposal was universally approved of by all the company; and all, but Harry, promised to contribute in proportion to their finances. This Master Mash observing, said, "Well, farmer, and what will you subscribe?" Harry answered, that upon this occasion he must beg to be excused, for he had nothing to give. "Here is a pretty fellow!" answered Mash; last night we saw him pouch thirty shillings of our money, which he cheated us out of at commerce, and now the little stingy wretch will not contribute half-a-crown, where we are giving away whole guineas." Upon

this, Miss Matilda said, in an ironical manner, that Master Harry had always an excellent reason to give for his conduct; and she did not doubt that he could prove to the satisfaction of them all, that it was more liberal to keep his money in his pocket than to give it away. Harry, who was a little nettled at these reflections, answered, that though he was not bound to give any reason, he thought he had a very good one to give; and that was, that he saw no generosity in thus bestowing money. "According to your own account," added he, "the person you have been talking of, gains more than fifty poor families have in the country to maintain themselves; and therefore, if I had any money to give away, I should certainly give to those that want it most. With these words, Harry went out of the room, and the rest of the gentry, after abusing him very liberally, sat down to cards. But Miss Simmons, who imagined that there was more in Harry's conduct than he had explained, excused herself from cards, and took an opportunity of talking to him upon the subject. After speaking to him with great good-nature, she asked him, whether it might not have been better to have contributed something along with the rest, than to have offended them by so free an exposition of his sentiments; even though he did not entirely approve of the scheme. "Indeed, Madam," said Harry, "this is what I would gladly have done, but it was totally out of my power." "How can that be, Harry? did you not win, the other night, nearly thirty shillings?" "That, Madam, all belonged to you; and I have already disposed of it in your name, in a manner which I hope

you will not disapprove." "How is that?" answered the young lady with some surprise. "Madam," said Harry, "there was a young woman who lived with my father as a servant, and always behaved with the greatest honesty and carefulness. This young woman had an aged father and mother, who for a great while were able to maintain themselves by their own labour; but at last the poor old man became too weak to do a day's work, and his wife was afflicted with a disease they call the palsy. Now, when this good young woman saw that her parents were in such great distress, she left her place and went to live with them, on purpose to take care of them; and she works very hard, whenever she can get work, and fares very hard, in order to maintain her parents; and though we assist them all we can, I know that sometimes they can hardly get food and clothes. Therefore, Madam, as you were so kind as to say, that I should dispose of this money for you, I ran over this morning to these poor people, and gave them all the money in your name: and I hope you will not be displeased at the use I have put it to." "Indeed," answered the young lady, "I am much obliged to you for the good opinion you have of me; and the application of it does me great honour: I am only sorry you did not give it in your own name." "That," replied Harry, "I had not any right to do: it would have been attributing to myself what did not belong to me, and equally inconsistent with truth and honesty."

In this manner did the time pass away at Mr. Merton's, while Harry received very little satisfac-

tion from his visit, except in conversing with Miss Simmons. The affability and good sense of this young lady had entirely gained his confidence. While all the other young ladies were continually intent upon displaying their talents and importance, she alone was simple and unaffected. But what disgusted Harry more than ever was, that his refined companions seemed to consider themselves, and a few of their acquaintance, as the only beings of any consequence in the world. The most trifling inconvenience, the being a little too hot, a little too cold, the walking a few hundred yards, the waiting a few minutes for their dinner, the having a trifling cold or a little head-ache, were misfortunes so feelingly lamented, that he would have imagined they were the most tender of the human species, had he not observed that they considered the sufferings of all below them with a profound indifference. If the misfortunes of the poor were mentioned, he heard of nothing but the insolence and ingratitude of that class of people, which seemed to be a sufficient excuse for the want of common humanity. "Surely," said Harry to himself, "there cannot be so much difference between one human being and another; or if there is, I should think that part of them the most valuable, which cultivates the ground and provides necessaries for all the rest: not those, who understand nothing but dress, walking with their toes out, staring modest people out of countenance, and jabbering a few words of a foreign language."

But now the attention of all the younger part of

the company was fixed upon making preparations for a ball; which Mrs. Merton had determined to give, in honour of Master Tommy's return. The whole house was now full of milliners, mantua-makers, and dancing-masters. All the young ladies were employed in giving directions about their clothes, or in practising the steps of different dances. Harry now, for the first time, began to comprehend the infinite importance of dress. Even the elderly ladies seemed to be as much interested about the affair as their daughters; and instead of the lessons of conduct and wisdom which he expected to hear, nothing seemed to employ their attention a moment, but French trimmings, gauzes, and Italian flowers. Miss Simmons alone appeared to consider the approaching solemnity with perfect indifference. Harry had never heard a single word drop from her that expressed either interest or impatience; but he had for some days observed her employed in her room, with more than common assiduity. At length, upon the very day that was destined for this important exhibition, she came to him with a benevolent smile, and spoke to him thus: "I was so much pleased with the account you gave me the other day, of that poor young woman's duty and affection towards her parents, that I have for some time employed myself in preparing for them a little present, which I shall be obliged to you, Master Harry, to convey to them. I have unfortunately never learned either to embroider, or to paint artificial flowers; but my good uncle has taught me, the best employment I can make of my hands is to assist those that cannot assist themselves." Say-

ing this, she put into his hands a parcel that contained some linen and other necessaries for the poor old people; and bade him tell them not to forget to call upon her uncle, when she returned home; as he was always happy to assist the deserving and industrious poor. Harry received her present with gratitude, and almost with tears of joy; and looking up in her face, imagined that he saw the features of one of those angels which he had read of in the Scriptures: so much does real, disinterested benevolence, improve the expression of the human countenance.

But all the rest of the young gentry were employed in cares of a very different nature, the dressing their hair and adorning their persons. Tommy himself had now completely resumed his natural character, and thrown aside all that he had learned during his residence with Mr. Barlow. He had contracted an infinite fondness for all those scenes of dissipation which his new friends daily described to him, and began to be convinced, that one of the most important things in life is a fashionable dress. In this most rational sentiment he had been confirmed by almost all the young ladies, with whom he had conversed since his return home. The distinction of character, relative to virtue and understanding, which had been with so much pains inculcated upon his mind, seemed here to be entirely unheeded. No one took the trouble of examining the real principles or motives from which any human being acted; while the most minute attention was continually given to what regarded merely the outside. He observed,

that the omission of every duty towards our fellow-creatures was not only excused, but even to a certain degree admired, provided it was joined with a certain fashionable appearance; while the most perfect probity, or integrity, was mentioned with coldness or disgust, and frequently with open ridicule, if unconnected with a brilliant appearance. As to all the common virtues of life, such as industry, economy, a punctuality in discharging our obligations or keeping our words, these were qualities which were treated as fit for nothing but the vulgar. Mr. Barlow, he found, had been utterly mistaken in all the principles which he had ever inculcated. "The human species," said Mr. Barlow, "can only be supplied with food and necessaries, by a constant assiduity in cultivating the earth and providing for their mutual wants. It is by labour that every thing is produced; without labour, these fertile fields which are now adorned with all the luxuriance of plenty, would be converted into barren heaths or impenetrable thickets; these meadows, the support of a thousand herds of cattle, be covered with stagnated waters, that would not only render them uninhabitable by beasts, but corrupt the air with pestilential vapours. Even these innumerable flocks of sheep, that feed along the hills, would disappear along with that cultivation, which can alone support them, and secure their existence. For this reason," would Mr. Barlow say, "labour is the first and most indispensable duty of the human species, from which no one can have a right entirely to withdraw himself." But, however true might be these principles, they were so totally inconsistent with

the conduct and opinions of his new friends, that it was not possible for Tommy long to remember their force. He had been near a month with a few young gentlemen and ladies of his own rank; and, instead of their being brought up to produce any thing useful, he found that the great object of all their knowledge and education, was only to waste, to consume, to destroy, to dissipate what was produced by others. He even found that this inability to assist either themselves or others, seemed to be a merit upon which every one valued himself extremely; so that an individual that could not exist without having two attendants to wait upon him, was superior to him that had only one; but was obliged in turn to yield to another that required four. And, indeed, this new system seemed much more easy than the old; for instead of giving himself any trouble about his manners or understanding, he might with safety indulge all his caprices; give way to all his passions; be humorsome, haughty, unjust, and selfish to the extreme; he might be ungrateful to his friends, disobedient to his parents, a glutton, an ignorant blockhead; in short, every thing which to plain sense appears most frivolous or contemptible, without incurring the least imputation, provided his hair hung fashionably about his ears, his buckles were sufficiently large, and his politeness unimpeached to the ladies.

Once, indeed, Harry had thrown him into a disagreeable train of thinking, by asking him with great simplicity, what sort of a figure these young gentlemen would have made in the army of Leonidas, or

these young ladies upon a desert island, where they would be obliged to shift for themselves. But Tommy had lately learned that nothing spoils the face more than intense reflection; and therefore, as he could not easily resolve the question, he wisely determined to forget it.

And now the important evening approached; the largest room in the house was lighted up for the dancers, and all the little company assembled. Tommy was that day dressed in an unusual style of elegance; and had submitted without murmuring to be under the hands of a hair-dresser for two hours. But what gave him the greatest satisfaction of all, was an immense pair of new buckles, which Mrs. Merton had sent for on purpose to grace the person of her son. Several minuets were danced, to the great admiration of the company; and among the rest, Tommy, who had been practising ever since he had been at home, had the honour of exhibiting with Miss Matilda. He indeed began with a certain degree of diffidence, but was soon inspired with a proper degree of confidence, by the applauses which resounded on every side. "What an elegant little creature!" cried one lady. "What a shape is there!" said a second: "I protest he puts me in mind of Vestris himself." "Indeed," said a third, "Mrs. Merton is a most happy mother to be possessed of such a son, who wants nothing but an introduction to the world, to be one of the most elegant creatures in England, and the most accomplished."

As soon as Tommy had finished his dance, he led his partner to her seat, with a grace that surprised all

the company anew; and then, with the sweetest condescension imaginable, he went from one lady to another, to receive the praises which they liberally poured out; as if it was the greatest action in the world to draw one foot behind another, and to walk on tiptoe. Harry, in the mean time, had shrouded himself in the most obscure part of the room, and was silently gazing upon the scene that passed. He knew that his company would give no pleasure among the elegant figures that engrossed the foremost seats, and felt not the least inclination for such an honour. In this situation he was observed by Master Compton; who, at the same instant, formed a scheme of mortifying Miss Simmons, whom he did not like, and of exposing Harry to the general ridicule. He therefore proposed it to Mash, who had partly officiated as master of the ceremonies, and who, with all the readiness of officious malice, agreed to assist him. Master Mash, therefore, went up to Miss Simmons, and with all the solemnity of respect, invited her out to dance: which she, although indifferent about the matter, accepted without hesitation. In the mean time, Master Compton went up to Harry with the same hypocritical civility, and in Miss Simmon's name invited him to dance a minuet. It was in vain that Harry assured him he knew nothing about the matter; his perfidious friend told him, that it was an indispensable duty for him to stand up; that Miss Simmons would never forgive him if he should refuse; that it would be sufficient if he could just describe the figure, without embarrassing himself about the steps. In the mean time, he pointed out Miss Sim-

mons, who was advancing towards the upper end of the room, and taking advantage of his confusion and embarrassment, led him forward, and placed him by the young lady's side. Harry was not yet acquainted with the sublime science of imposing upon unwary simplicity, and therefore never doubted that the message had come from his friend; and as nothing could be more repugnant to his character than the want of compliance, he thought it necessary at least to go and expostulate with her upon the subject. This was his intention when he suffered himself to be led up the room; but his tormentors did not give him time; for they placed him by the side of the young lady, and instantly called to the music to begin. Miss Simmons, in her turn, was equally surprised at the partner that was provided for her: she had never imagined minuet-dancing to be one of Harry's accomplishments; and therefore instantly suspected that it was a concerted scheme to mortify her. However in this she was determined they should be disappointed, as she was destitute of all pride, and had the sincerest regard for Harry. As soon, therefore, as the music struck up, the young lady began her reverence; which Harry, who found he was now completely caught, and had no time for explanation, imitated as well as he was able, but in such a manner as set the whole room in a titter. Harry, however, arming himself with all the fortitude he possessed, performed his part as well as could be expected from a person that had never learned a single step of dancing. By keeping his eye fixed upon his partner, he made a shift at least to preserve something of the figure,

although he was terribly deficient in the steps and graces of the dance. But his partner, who was scarcely less embarrassed than himself, and wished to shorten the exhibition, after crossing once, presented him with her hand. Harry had unfortunately not remarked the nature of this manœuvre with perfect accuracy; and therefore imagining that one hand was just as good as the other, he offered the young lady his left, instead of his right hand. At this incident, a universal peal of merriment, which they no longer laboured to conceal, burst from almost all the company; and Miss Simmons wishing at any rate to close the scene, presented her partner with both her hands, and abruptly finished the dance. The unfortunate couple then retreated to the lower end of the room, amid the jests and sneers of their companions, particularly Mash and Compton, who assumed unusual importance, upon the credit of such a brilliant invention.

When they were seated, Miss Simmons could not help asking Harry, with some displeasure, why he had thus exposed himself and her, by attempting what he was totally ignorant of; and added, that though there was no disgrace in not being able to dance, it was very great folly to attempt it without having learned a single step. "Indeed, Madam," answered Harry, "I never should have thought of trying to do what I knew I was totally ignorant of; but Master Compton came to me, and told me, that you particularly desired me to dance with you, and led me to the other end of the room; and I only came to speak to

you, and to inform you, that I knew nothing about the matter, for fear you should think me uncivil; and then the music began to play, and you to dance, so that I had no opportunity of speaking; and I thought it better to do the best I could, than to stand still, or leave you there." Miss Simmons instantly recovered her former good-humour, and said, "Well, Harry, we are not the first, nor shall be the last by hundreds, that have made a ridiculous figure in a ball-room, without so good an excuse. But I am sorry to see so malicious a disposition in these young gentlemen, and that all their knowledge of polite life has not taught them a little better manners." "Why, Madam," answered Harry, "since you are so good as to talk to me upon the subject, I must confess that I have been very much surprised at many things I have seen at Mr. Merton's. All these young gentlemen and ladies are continually talking about genteel life and manners, and yet they are frequently doing things which surprise me. Mr. Barlow has always told me that politeness consisted in a disposition to oblige every body around us, and to say or do nothing which can give them disagreeable impressions. Yet I continually see these young gentlemen striving to do and say things, for no other reason than to give pain. For not to go any further than the present instance, what motive can Masters Compton and Mash have had, but to mortify you by giving you such a partner? You, Madam, too, that are so kind and good to every body, that I should think it impossible not to love you."

“Harry,” answered the young lady, “what you say about politeness is perfectly just. I have heard my uncle and many sensible people say the same. But in order to acquire this species of it, both goodness of heart and a just way of thinking are required; and therefore many people content themselves with aping what they can pick up in the dress, or gestures, or cant expressions of the higher classes: just like the poor ass, that dressed, in the skin of a lion, was taken for the lion himself, till his unfortunate braying exposed the cheat.” “Pray, Madam, what is that story?” said Harry. “It is a trifling one that I have read,” answered Miss Simmons, “of somebody, that having procured a lion’s skin, fastened it round the body of an ass, and then turned him loose, to the great affright of the neighbourhood. Those who saw him first, imagined that a monstrous lion had invaded the country, and fled with precipitation. Even the very cattle caught the panic, and were scattered by hundreds over the plains. In the mean time, the victorious ass pranced and capered along the fields, and diverted himself with running after the fugitives. But at length, in the gaiety of his heart, he broke out into such a discordant braying, as surprised those that were nearest, and expected to hear a very different noise from under the terrible skin. At length a resolute fellow ventured by degrees nearer to this object of their terror, and, discovering the cheat that had been practised upon them, divested the poor ass of all his borrowed spoils, and drove him away with his cudgel.”

“This story,” continued Miss Simmons, “is con-

tinually coming into my mind, when I see any body imagine himself of great importance, because he has adopted some particular mode of dress, or the grimaces of those that call themselves fashionable people. Nor do I ever see Master Mash or Compton, without thinking of the lion's skin, and expecting every moment to hear them bray." Harry laughed very heartily at this story; but now their attention was called towards the company, who had ranged themselves by pairs for country dancing. Miss Simmons, who was very fond of this exercise, then asked Harry if he had never practised any of these dances. Harry said it had happened to him three or four times at home, and that he believed he should not be puzzled about any of the figures. "Well then," said the young lady, "to show how little I regard their intended mortification, I will stand up, and you shall be my partner."

So they rose, and placed themselves at the bottom of the whole company, according to the laws of dancing, which appoint that place for those who come last. And now the music began to strike up in a more joyous strain; the little dancers exerted themselves with all their activity, and the exercise diffused a glow of health and cheerfulness over the faces of the most pale and languid. Harry exerted himself here, with much better success than he had lately done in the minuet. He had great command over all his limbs, and was well versed in every play that gives address to the body; so that he found no difficulty in practising all the varied figures of the dances; particularly with the assistance of Miss Simmons, who

explained to him every thing that appeared embarrassing. But now, by the continuance of the dance, all who were at first at the upper end had descended to the bottom; where, by the laws of the diversion, they ought to have waited quietly, till their companions, becoming in their turn uppermost, had danced down to their former places. But, when Miss Simmons and Harry expected to have had their just share of the exercise, they found that almost all their companions had deserted them, and retired to their places. Harry could not help wondering at this behaviour; but Miss Simmons told him with a smile, that it was only of a piece with the rest; and that she had often remarked it at country assemblies, where all the gentry of a county were gathered together. "This is frequently the way," added she, "that those who think themselves superior to the rest of the world, choose to show their importance." "This is a very bad way, indeed," replied Harry: "people may choose whether they will dance or practise any particular diversion; but if they do, they ought to submit to the laws of it, without repining; and I have always observed among the little boys that I am acquainted with, that wherever this disposition prevails, it is the greatest proof of a bad and contemptible temper." "I am afraid," replied Miss Simmons, "that your observations will hold universally true; and that those who expect so much for themselves, without being willing to consider their fellow-creatures in turn, in whatever station they are found, are always the most mean, ignorant, and despicable of the species."

"I remember," said Harry, "reading a story of a

great man, called Sir Philip Sydney. This gentleman was reckoned not only the bravest, but the politest person in all England. It happened that he was sent over the sea to assist some of our allies against their enemies. After having distinguished himself in such a manner as gained him the love and esteem of all the army, this excellent man one day received a shot, which broke his thigh as he was bravely fighting at the head of his men. Sir Philip Sydney felt that he was mortally wounded, and was obliged to turn his horse's head and retire to his tent, in order to have his wound examined. By the time that he reached the tent, he not only felt great agonies from his wound, but the heat of the weather, and the fever which the pain produced, had excited an intolerable thirst; so that he prayed his attendants to fetch him a little water. With infinite difficulty some water was procured and brought to him; but, just as he was raising the cup to his lips, he chanced to see a poor English soldier, who had been mortally wounded in the same engagement, and lay upon the ground, faint and bleeding, and ready to expire. The poor man was suffering like his general, from the pain of a consuming thirst; and therefore, though respect prevented him from asking for any, he turned his dying eyes upon the water, with an eagerness which sufficiently explained his sufferings. Upon this, the excellent and noble gentleman took the cup, which he had not yet tasted, from his lips, and gave it to his attendants; ordering them to carry it to the wounded soldier, and only saying, 'This poor man wants it still more than I do.'

“This story,” added Harry, “was always a particular favourite with Mr. Barlow, and he has often pointed it out to me, as an example not only of the greatest virtue and humanity, but also of that elevated method of thinking which constitutes the true gentleman. For what is it, I have heard him say, that gives a superiority of manners, but the inclination to sacrifice our own pleasures and interest to the well-being of others? An ordinary person might have pitied the poor soldier, or even have assisted him, when he had first taken care of himself: but who, in such a dreadful extremity as the brave Sydney was reduced to, would be capable of even forgetting his own sufferings to relieve another, that had not acquired the generous habit of always slighting his own gratifications for the sake of his fellow-creatures?”

As Harry was conversing in this manner, the little company had left off dancing, and were refreshing themselves with a variety of cakes and agreeable liquors, which had been provided for the occasion. Tommy Merton and the other young gentlemen were now distinguishing themselves by their attendance upon the ladies, whom they were supplying with every thing they chose to have; but no one thought it worth his while to wait upon Miss Simmons. When Harry observed this, he ran to the table, and upon a large waiter brought her cakes and lemonade, which he presented, if not with a better grace, with a sincerer desire to oblige than any of the rest. But, as he was stooping down to offer her the choice, Master Mash unluckily passed that way, and, elated

by the success of his late piece of ill-nature, determined to attempt a second still more brutal than the first. For this reason, just as Miss Simmons was helping herself to some wine and water, Mash, pretending to stumble, pushed Harry in such a manner, that the greater part of the contents of the glasses was discharged full into her bosom. The young lady coloured at the insult, and Harry, who instantly perceived that it was done on purpose, being no longer able to contain his indignation, seized a glass that was only half emptied, and discharged the contents full into the face of the aggressor. Mash, who was a boy of violent passions, exasperated at this retaliation, which he so well deserved, instantly caught up a drinking glass, and flung it full at the head of Harry. Happy was it for him, that it only grazed his head, without taking the full effect. It however laid bare a considerable gash, and Harry was in an instant covered with his own blood. This sight only provoked him the more, and made him forget both the place and company where he was; so that flying upon Mash, with all the fury of just revenge, a dreadful combat ensued, which put the whole room into a consternation. But Mr. Merton soon appeared, and with some difficulty separated the enraged champions. He then enquired into the subject of the contest, which Master Mash endeavoured to explain away as an accident. But Harry persisted in his account with so much firmness, in which he was corroborated by the testimony of Miss Simmons, that Mr. Merton readily perceived the truth. Mash, however, apologized for himself in the

best manner he was able, by saying that he had only meant to play Master Harry an innocent trick, but that he had undesignedly injured Miss Simmons. Whatever Mr. Merton felt, he did not say a great deal; he, however, endeavoured to pacify the enraged combatants, and ordered assistance to Harry to bind up the wound, and clean him from the blood which had now disfigured him from head to foot.

Mrs. Merton in the mean time, who was sitting at the upper end of the room amidst the other ladies, had seen the fray, and been informed that it was owing to Harry's throwing a glass of lemonade in Master Mash's face. This gave Mrs. Compton an opportunity of indulging herself again in long invectives against Harry, his breeding, family, and manners. "She never," she said, "had liked the boy, and now he had justified all her forebodings upon the subject. Such a little vulgar wretch could never have been witness to any thing but scenes of riot and ill-manners; and now he was brawling and fighting in a gentleman's house, just as he would do at one of the public houses to which he was used to go with his father." While she was in the midst of this eloquent harangue, Mr. Merton came up, and gave a more unprejudiced narrative of the affair; he acquitted Harry of all blame, and said, that it was impossible, even for the mildest temper in the world, to act otherwise upon such unmerited provocation. This account seemed wonderfully to turn the scale in Harry's favour; though Miss Simmons was no great favourite with the young ladies, yet the spirit and gallantry which he had discovered in her cause, began

to act very forcibly upon their minds. One of the young ladies observed, that if Master Harry was better dressed, he would certainly be a very pretty boy; another said, she had always thought that he had a look above his station; and a third remarked, that considering he had never learned to dance, he had by no means a vulgar look.

This untoward accident having thus been amicably settled, the diversions of the evening went forward. But Harry, who had now lost all taste for genteel company, took the first opportunity of retiring to bed; where he soon fell asleep, and forgot both the mortification and bruises he had received. In the meantime, the little company below found means to entertain themselves till past midnight, and then retired to their chambers.

The next morning they rose later than usual; and, as several of the young gentlemen who had been invited to the preceding evening's diversion, were not to return till after dinner, they agreed to take a walk into the country. Harry went with them as usual, though Master Mash, by his misrepresentations, had prejudiced Tommy and all the rest against him. But Harry, who was conscious of his own innocence, and began to feel the pride of injured friendship, disdained to give an explanation of his behaviour; since his friend was not sufficiently interested about the matter to demand one. But while they were slowly walking along the common, they discovered at a distance a prodigious crowd of people, who were all moving forward in the same direction. This attracted the curiosity of the little troop; and upon en-

quiry they found there was going to be a bull-baiting. Instantly an eager desire seized upon all the little gentry to see the diversion. One obstacle alone presented itself, which was, that their parents, and particularly Mrs. Merton, had made them promise that they would avoid every species of danger. This objection was however removed by Master Billy Lyddal; who observed that there could be no danger in the sight, as the bull was to be tied fast, and could therefore do them no harm. "Besides," added he, smiling, "what occasion have they to know that we have been at all? I hope we are not such simpletons as to accuse ourselves, or such tell-tales as to inform against one another." "No! no! no!" was the universal exclamation from all but Harry, who had remained profoundly silent upon the occasion. Master Harry has not said a word," said one of the little folks; "sure he will not tell of us." "Indeed," said Harry, "I don't wish to tell of you; but if I am asked where we have been, how can I help telling?" "What!" answered Master Lyddal; "cannot you say that we have been walking along the road, or across the common, without mentioning any thing further?" "No," said Harry; "that would not be speaking truth: besides, bull-baiting is a very cruel and dangerous diversion, and therefore none of us should go to see it; particularly Master Merton, whose mother loves him so much, and is so careful about him." This speech was not received with much approbation, by those to whom it was addressed. "A pretty fellow," said one, "to give himself these airs, and pretend to be wiser than every one else!"—

“What!” said Master Compton, “does this beggar’s brat think he is to govern gentlemens son’s, because Master Merton is so good as to keep company with him?”—“If I were Master Merton,” said a third, “I’d soon send the little impertinent jackanapes home to his own blackguard family.” And Master Mash, who was the biggest and strongest boy in the whole company, came up to Harry, and grinning in his face, said, “So, all the return that you make to Master Merton for his goodness to you, is to be a spy and an informer, is it, you little dirty blackguard?” Harry, who had long perceived and lamented the coolness of Master Merton towards him, was now much more grieved to see that his friend was not only silent, but seemed to take an ill-natured pleasure in these insults, than at the insults themselves which were offered to him. However, as soon as the crowd of tormentors which surrounded him, would give him leave to speak, he coolly answered, that he was as little of a spy and informer as any of them; and as to begging, he thanked God, he wanted as little of them, as they did of him: “besides,” added he, “were I even reduced so low as that, I should know better how to employ my time, than to ask charity of any one here.”

This sarcastic answer, and the reflections that were made upon it, had such an effect upon the too irritable temper of Master Merton, that in an instant, forgetting his former obligations and affection to Harry, he strutted up to him, and clenching his fist, asked him whether he meant to insult him? “Well done, Master Merton,” echoed through the whole society;

“thrash him heartily for his impudence.” “No, Master Tommy,” answered Harry, “it is you and your friends here that insult me.” “What!” answered Tommy, “are you a person of such consequence, that you must not be spoken to? You are a prodigious fine gentleman indeed.” “I always thought you one till now,” answered Harry. “How, you rascal,” said Tommy, “do you say that I am not a gentleman?—Take that,” and immediately struck Harry upon the face with his fist. His fortitude was not proof against this treatment; he turned his face away, and only said, in a low tone of voice, “Master Tommy, Master Tommy, I never should have thought it possible you could have treated me in this unworthy manner:” then covering his face with both his hands, he burst into an agony of crying.

But the little troop of gentlemen, who were vastly delighted with the mortification which Harry had received, and had formed a very indifferent opinion of his prowess, from the patience which he had hitherto exerted, began to gather round, and repeat their persecutions. Coward, and blackguard, and tell-tale, echoed in a chorus through the circle; and some more forward than the rest, seized hold of him by the hair, in order that he might hold up his head, and show his pretty face. But Harry, who now began to recollect himself, wiped his tears with his hands, and looking up, asked them with a firm tone of voice and a steady countenance, why they meddled with him; then swinging round, he disengaged himself at once, from all who had taken hold of him. The greatest part of the company gave back at this question, and

seemed disposed to leave him unmolested; but Master Mash, who was the most quarrelsome and impertinent boy present, advanced, and looking at Harry with a contemptuous sneer, said, "This is the way we always treat such little blackguards as you; and if you have not had enough to satisfy you, we will willingly give you some more." "As to all your nicknames and nonsense," answered Harry, "I don't think it worth my while to resent them; but though I have suffered Master Merton to strike me, there's not another in the company shall do it; or if he chooses to try, he shall soon find whether or not I am a coward. Master Mash made no answer to this but by a slap of the face, which Harry returned by a punch of his fist, which had almost upset his antagonist, in spite of his superiority of size and strength. This unexpected check, from a boy so much less than himself, might probably have cooled the courage of Mash, had he not been ashamed of yielding to one whom he had treated with so much unmerited contempt. Summoning, therefore, all his resolution, he flew at Harry like a fury; and, as he had often been engaged in quarrels like this, he struck him with so much force, that with the first blow he aimed, he felled him to the ground. Harry, foiled in this manner, but not dismayed, rose in an instant, and attacked his adversary with redoubled vigour, at the very moment when he thought himself sure of the victory. A second time did Mash, after a short but severe contest, close with his undaunted enemy, and by dint of superior strength, roughly hurl him to the ground. The little troop of spectators,

who had mistaken Harry's patient fortitude for cowardice, began now to entertain the sincerest respect for his courage, and gathered round the combatants in silence. A second time did Harry rise and attack his stronger adversary, with the cool intrepidity of a veteran combatant. The battle now began to grow more dreadful and more violent. Mash had superior strength and dexterity, and greater habitude of fighting; his blows were aimed with equal skill and force; and each appeared sufficient to crush an enemy so much inferior in size, in strength, in years: but Harry possessed a body hardened to support pain and hardship; a greater degree of activity; a cool, unyielding courage, which nothing could disturb or daunt. Four times had he been now thrown down by the irresistible strength of his foe; four times had he risen stronger from his fall, covered with dirt and blood, and panting with fatigue, but still unconquered. At length, from the duration of the combat and his own violent exertions, the strength of Mash began to fail: enraged and disappointed at the obstinate resistance he had met with, he began to lose all command of his temper and strike at random; his breath grew short, his efforts were more laborious, and his knees seemed scarcely able to sustain his weight. But actuated by rage and shame, he rushed with all his might upon Harry, as if determined to crush him with one last effort. Harry prudently stepped back, and contented himself with parrying the blows that were aimed at him; till seeing that his antagonist was almost exhausted by his own impe-

tuosity, he darted at him with all his force, and, by one successful blow, levelled him with the ground.

An involuntary shout of triumph now burst from the little assembly of spectators; for such is the temper of human beings, that they are more inclined to consider superiority of force than justice; and the very same boys who just before were loading Harry with taunts and outrages, were now ready to congratulate him upon his victory. He, however, when he found his antagonist no longer capable of resistance, kindly assisted him to rise, and told him he was very sorry for what had happened; but he, oppressed at once with the pain of his bruises and the disgrace of his defeat, observed an obstinate silence.

Just in this moment, their attention was engaged by a new and sudden spectacle. A bull of the largest size and greatest beauty was led across the plain, adorned with ribbons of various colours. The majestic animal suffered himself to be led along an unre-sisting prey, till he arrived at the spot which was destined for the theatre of his persecutions. Here he was fastened to an iron ring, which had been strongly let into the ground, and whose force they imagined would be sufficient to restrain him, even in the midst of his most violent exertions. An innumerable crowd of men, of women, of children, then surrounded the place, waiting with eager curiosity for the inhuman sport which they expected. The little party, which had accompanied Master Merton, were now no longer to be restrained; their friends, their parents, admonition, duty, promises, were all forgotten in an instant, and, solely intent upon gratifying

their curiosity, they mingled with the surrounding multitude.

Harry, although reluctantly, followed them at a distance; neither the ill-usage he had received, nor the pain of his wounds, could make him unmindful of Master Merton, or careless of his safety. He knew too well the dreadful accidents which frequently attend these barbarous sports, to be able to quit his friend, till he had once more seen him in a place of safety. And now the noble animal, that was to be thus wantonly tormented, was fastened to the ring by a strongly twisted cord; which, though it confined and cramped his exertions, did not entirely restrain them.

Although possessed of almost irresistible strength, he seemed unwilling to exert it, and looked round upon the infinite multitude of his enemies, with a gentleness that ought to have disarmed their animosity. Presently, a dog of the largest size and most ferocious courage was let loose; who, as soon as he beheld the bull, uttered a savage yell, and rushed upon him with all the rage of inveterate animosity. The bull suffered him to approach with the coolness of deliberate courage; but just as the dog was springing up to seize him, he rushed forward to meet his foe, and putting his head to the ground, canted him into the air several yards; and had not the spectators run and caught him upon their backs and hands, he would have been crushed to pieces in the fall. The same fate attended another, and another dog, which were let loose successively; the one was killed

upon the spot, while the other, which had a leg broken in the fall, crawled howling and limping away. The bull, in the mean while, behaved with all the calmness and intrepidity of an experienced warrior; without violence, without passion, he waited every attack of his enemies, and then severely punished them for their rashness.

While this was transacting, to the diversion not only of the rude and illiterate populace, but to that of the little gentry with Master Merton, a poor half-naked black came up, and humbly implored their charity. He had served, he told them, on board an English vessel, and even showed them the scars of several wounds he had received; but now he was discharged, and, without friends, without assistance, he could scarcely find food to support his wretched life, or clothes to cover him from the wintry wind. Some of the young gentry, who from a bad education had been little taught to feel or pity the distress of others, were base enough to attempt to jest upon his dusky colour and foreign accent; but Master Merton, who, though lately much corrupted and changed from what he had been with Mr. Barlow, preserved a great degree of generosity, put his hand into his pocket in order to relieve him, but unfortunately found nothing to give; the foolish profusion which he had lately learned from the young gentlemen at his father's house, had made him waste in cards, in play-things, in trifles, all his stock of money; and now he found himself unable to relieve that distress which he pitied.

Thus repulsed on every side, and unassisted, the unfortunate black approached the place where Harry stood, holding out the tattered remains of his hat, and imploring charity. Harry had not much to give, but he took sixpence out of his pocket, which was all his riches, and gave it with the kindest look of compassion, saying, "Here, poor man, this is all I have; if I had had more, it should be at your service." He had no time to add more; for at that instant, three fierce dogs rushed upon the bull at once, and by their joint attacks rendered him almost mad. The calm, deliberate courage, which he had hitherto shown, was now changed into rage and desperation; he roared with pain and fury; flashes of fire seemed to come from his angry eyes, and his mouth was covered with foam and blood. He hurried round the stake with incessant toil and rage, first aiming at one, then at another, of the persecuting dogs, that harassed him on every side, growling and baying incessantly, and biting him in every part. At length, with a furious effort that he made, he trampled one of his foes beneath his feet, and gored a second to that degree, that his bowels came through the wound; and at the same moment, the cord which had hitherto confined him, snapped asunder, and let him loose upon the affrighted multitude. It is impossible to conceive the terror and dismay which instantly seized the crowd of spectators. Those, who before had been hallooing with joy, and encouraging the fury of the dogs with shouts and acclamations, were now scattered over the plain, and fled from the fury of the animal, which

they had been so basely tormenting. The enraged bull, meanwhile, rushed like lightning over the plain, trampling some, goring others, and taking ample vengeance for the injuries he had received. Presently, he rushed, with headlong fury, towards the spot where Master Merton and his associates stood: all fled with wild affright, but with a speed that was not equal to that of the pursuer. Shrieks, and outcries, and lamentations were heard on every side; and those who a few minutes before had despised the good advice of Harry, would now have given the world to be safe in the houses of their parents. Harry alone seemed to preserve his presence of mind; he neither cried out nor ran; but when the dreadful animal approached, leaped nimbly aside, and the bull passed on, without embarrassing himself about his escape. Not so fortunate was Master Merton; he happened to be the last of the little troop of flyers, and full in the way which the bull had taken. And now his destruction appeared certain; for as he ran, whether through fear or the inequality of the ground, his foot slipped, and down he tumbled, in the very path of the enraged pursuing animal. All who saw, imagined his fate inevitable; and it would certainly have proved so, had not Harry, with a courage and presence of mind above his years, suddenly seized a prong, which one of the fugitives had dropped, and at the very moment when the bull was stooping to gore his defenceless friend, advanced and wounded him in the flank. The bull, in an instant, turned short, and with redoubled rage made at his new assailant; and it is probable that, notwithstanding his intrepidity,

Harry would have paid the price of his assistance to his friend with his own life, had not an unexpected succour arrived. But, in that instant, the grateful black rushed on like lightning to assist him, and assailing the bull with a weighty stick which he held in his hand, compelled him to turn his rage upon a new object. The bull indeed attacked him with all the impetuosity of revenge, but the black jumped nimbly aside and eluded his fury. Not contented with this, he wheeled round his fierce antagonist, and seizing him by the tail, began to batter his sides with an unexpected storm of blows. In vain did the enraged animal bellow and writhe himself about in all the convulsions of madness; his intrepid foe, without ever quitting his hold, suffered himself to be dragged about the field, still continuing his discipline, till the creature was almost spent with the fatigue of his own violent agitations. And now some of the boldest of the spectators, taking courage, approached to his assistance, and throwing a well-twisted rope over his head, they at length, by the dint of superior numbers, completely mastered the furious animal, and bound him to a tree. In the mean while, several of Mr. Merton's servants, who had been sent out after the young gentlemen, approached and took up their young master, who, though without a wound, was almost dead with fear and agitation. But Harry, after seeing that his friend was perfectly safe, and in the hands of his own family, invited the black to accompany him, and instead of returning to Mr. Merton's, took the way which led to his father's house.

While these scenes were passing, Mrs. Merton,

though ignorant of the danger of her son, was not undisturbed at home. Some accounts had been brought of Harry's combat, which served to make her uneasy, and to influence her still more against him. Mrs. Compton too, and Miss Matilda, who had conceived a violent dislike to Harry, were busy to inflame her by their malicious representations. While she was in these dispositions Mr. Merton happened to enter, and was at once attacked by all the ladies upon the subject of this improper connexion. He endeavoured, for a long time, to remove their prejudices by reason, but when he found that to be impossible, he contented himself with telling his wife, that a little time would perhaps decide which were the most proper companions for their son; and that till Harry had done something to render himself unworthy of their notice, he never would consent to the treating him with coldness or neglect.

At this moment a female servant burst into the room with all the wildness of affright, and cried out, with a voice that was scarcely articulate, "Oh! Madam, Madam! such an accident—poor, dear Master Tommy——" "What of him, for God's sake?" cried out Mrs. Merton, with an impatience and concern that sufficiently marked her feelings." "Nay, Madam," answered the servant, "he is not much hurt they say; but little Sandford has taken him to a bull-baiting, and the bull has gored him, and William and John are bringing him home in their arms." These words were scarcely delivered, when Mrs. Merton uttered a violent shriek, and was instantly seized with an hysteric fit.

While the ladies were all employed in assisting her, and restoring her senses, Mr. Merton, who, though much alarmed, was more composed, walked precipitately out, to learn the truth of this imperfect narration. He had not proceeded far, before he met the crowd of children and servants, one of whom carried Tommy Merton in his arms. As soon as he was convinced that his son had received no other damage than a violent fright, he began to enquire into the circumstances of the affair; but before he had time to receive any information, Mrs. Merton, who had recovered from her fainting, came running wildly from the house. When she saw that her son was safe, she caught him in her arms, and began to utter all the incoherent expressions of a mother's fondness. It was with difficulty that her husband could prevail upon her to moderate her transports till they were within. Then she gave a loose to her feelings in all their violence; and, for a considerable time, was incapable of attending to any thing but the joy of his miraculous preservation.

At length, however, she became more composed, and observing that all the company were present except Harry Sandford, she exclaimed, with sudden indignation, "So, I see that little abominable wretch has not had the impudence to follow you in, and I almost wish that the bull had gored him as he deserved." "What little wretch, mamma," said Tommy, "do you mean?" "Whom can I mean," cried Mrs. Merton, "but that vile Harry Sandford, whom your father is so fond of, and who had nearly cost you your life, by leading you into this danger?" "He!

mamma," said Tommy, "he lead me into danger! He did all he could to persuade me not to go; and I was a very naughty boy indeed, not to take his advice." Mrs. Merton stood amazed at this information; for her prejudices had operated so powerfully upon her mind, that she had implicitly believed the guilt of Harry, upon the imperfect evidence of the maid. "Who was it then," said Mr. Merton, "could be so imprudent?" "Indeed, papa," answered Tommy, "we were all to blame, all but Harry, who advised and begged us not to go, and particularly me, because he said it would give you so much uneasiness when you knew it, and that it was so dangerous a diversion."

Mrs. Merton looked confused at her mistake, but Mrs. Compton observed that she supposed Harry was afraid of the danger, and therefore had wisely kept out of the way. "Oh! no, indeed, Madam," answered one of the little boys; "Harry is no coward, though we thought him so at first, when he let Master Tommy strike him; but he fought Master Mash in the bravest manner I ever saw, and though Master Mash fought very well, yet Harry had the advantage; and I saw him follow us at a little distance, and keep his eye upon Master Merton all the time, till the bull broke loose; and then I was so frightened that I do not know what became of him." "So, this is the little boy," said Mr. Merton, "that you were for driving from the society of your children! But let us hear more of the story, for as yet I know neither the particulars of his danger nor his escape." Upon this, one of the servants, who from some little distance had

seen the whole affair, was called in and examined. He gave them an exact account of all; of Tommy's misfortune; of Harry's bravery; of the unexpected succour of the poor black; and filled the whole room with admiration that such an action, so noble, so intrepid, so fortunate, should have been achieved by such a child.

Mrs. Merton was now silent with shame at reflecting upon her own unjust prejudices, and the ease with which she had become the enemy of a boy who had saved the life of her darling son; and who appeared as much superior in character to all the young gentlemen at her house, as they exceeded him in rank and fortune. The young ladies now forgot their former objections to his person and manners; and such is the effect of genuine virtue, all the company conspired to extol the conduct of Harry to the skies. But Mr. Merton, who had appeared more delighted than all the rest with the relation of Harry's intrepidity, now cast his eyes around the room, and seemed to be looking for his little friend. But when he could not find him, he said, with some concern, "Where can be our little deliverer? Surely he can have met with no accident, that he has not returned with the rest!" "No," said one of the servants; "as to that, Harry Sandford is safe enough, for I saw him go towards his own home, in company with the black." "Alas," answered Mr. Merton, "surely he must have received some unworthy treatment, that could make him thus abruptly desert us all. And now I recollect that I heard one of the young gentlemen mention a blow that Harry had received; surely, Tommy, you could not have

been so basely ungrateful as to strike the best and noblest of your friends?" Tommy, at this, hung down his head; his face was covered with a burning blush, and the tears began silently to trickle down his cheeks. Mrs. Merton remarked the anguish and confusion of her child, and, catching him in her arms, was going to clasp him to her bosom with the most endearing expressions; but Mr. Merton, hastily interrupting her, said, "It is not now a time to give way to fondness for a child, who, I fear, has acted the basest and vilest part that can disgrace a human being; and who, if what I suspect is true, can be only a dishonour to his parents." At this Tommy could no longer contain himself, but burst out into such a violent transport of crying, that Mrs. Merton, who seemed to feel the severity of Mr. Merton's conduct with still more poignancy than her son, caught her darling up in her arms, and carried him abruptly out of the room, accompanied by most of the ladies, who pitied Tommy's abasement, and agreed that there was no crime he could have been guilty of, which was not amply atoned for by such a charming sensibility.

But Mr. Merton, who now felt all the painful interest of a tender father, and considered this as the critical moment which was to give his son the impression of worth or baseness for life, was determined to examine the affair to the utmost. He therefore took the first opportunity of drawing the little boy aside who had mentioned Master Merton's striking Harry, and questioned him upon the subject. But he, who had no particular interest in disguising the truth, related the circumstances nearly as they had happened;

and, though he a little softened matters in Tommy's favour, yet, without intending it, he held up such a picture of his violence and injustice, as wounded his father to the soul.

While Mr. Merton was occupied by these uneasy feelings, he was agreeably surprised by a visit from Mr. Barlow, who came accidentally to see him, with a perfect ignorance of all the great events which had so recently happened. Mr. Merton received this worthy man with the sincerest cordiality; but there was such a gloom diffused over all his manners, that Mr. Barlow began to suspect that all was not right with Tommy, and therefore purposely enquired after him, to give his father an opportunity of speaking. This Mr. Merton did not fail to do; and taking Mr. Barlow affectionately by the hand, he said, "Oh! my dear Sir, I begin to fear that all my hopes are at an end in that boy, and all your kind endeavours thrown away. He has just behaved in such a manner as shows him to be radically corrupted, and insensible of every principle but pride." He then related to Mr. Barlow every incident of Tommy's behaviour, making the severest reflections upon his insolence and ingratitude, and blaming his own supineness, which had not earlier checked these boisterous passions, that now burst forth with such a degree of fury, and threatened ruin to his hopes. "Indeed," answered Mr. Barlow, "I am very sorry to hear this account of my little friend; yet, I do not see it quite in so serious a light as yourself: and, though I cannot deny the dangers that may arise from a character so susceptible of false impressions, and so violent at the same time, yet I

do not think the corruption either so great, or so general, as you seem to suspect. Do we not see, even in the most trifling habits of body or speech, that a long and continued attention is required, if we would wish to change them; and yet our perseverance is in the end generally successful? Why then should we imagine that those of the mind are less obstinate, or subject to different laws? Or, why should we rashly abandon ourselves to despair, from the first experiments that do not succeed according to our wishes?"

"Indeed," answered Mr. Merton, "what you say is perfectly consistent with the general benevolence of your character, and most consolatory to the tenderness of a father. Yet, I know too well the general weakness of parents in respect to the faults of their children, not to be upon my guard against the delusions of my own mind. And when I consider the abrupt transition of my son into every thing that is most inconsistent with goodness; how lightly, how instantaneously he seems to have forgotten every thing he had learned with you, I cannot help forming the most painful and melancholy presages of the future."

"Alas! Sir," answered Mr. Barlow, "what is the general malady of human nature, but this very instability which now appears in your son? Do you imagine that half the vices of men arise from real depravity of heart? On the contrary, I am convinced that human nature is infinitely more weak than wicked; and that the greater part of all bad conduct springs rather from want of firmness, than from any settled propensity to evil."

“Indeed,” replied Mr. Merton, “what you say is highly reasonable: nor did I ever expect that a boy so long indulged and spoiled should be exempt from failings. But what particularly hurts me is, to see him proceed to such disagreeable extremities, without any adequate temptation; extremities that I fear imply a defect of goodness and generosity, virtues which I always thought he had possessed in a very great degree.”

“Neither,” answered Mr. Barlow, “am I at all convinced that your son is deficient in either. But you are to consider the prevalence of example, and the circle to which you have lately introduced him. If it is so difficult even for persons of a more mature age and experience to resist the impressions of those with whom they constantly associate, how can you expect it from your son? To be armed against the prejudices of the world, and to distinguish real merit from the splendid vices which pass current in what is called society, is one of the most difficult of human sciences. Nor do I know a single character, however excellent, that would not candidly confess he has often made a wrong election, and paid that homage to a brilliant outside, which is only due to real merit.”

“You comfort me very much,” said Mr. Merton; “but such ungovernable passions! such violence and impetuosity!”—“Are indeed very formidable,” replied Mr. Barlow; “yet, when they are properly directed, produce the noblest effects; and history, as well as private observation, may inform us, that, if they sometimes lead their possessor astray, they are equally capable of bringing him back to the right

path, provided they are properly acted upon. You have, I doubt not, read the story of Polemo, who, from a debauched young man, became a celebrated philosopher, and a model of virtue, only by attending a single moral lecture."

"Indeed," said Mr. Merton, "I am ashamed to confess that the various employments and amusements in which I have passed the greater part of my life, have not afforded me as much leisure for reading as I could wish. You will therefore oblige me very much by repeating the story you allude to."

THE STORY OF POLEMO.

"POLEMO," said Mr. Barlow, "was a young man of Athens, so distinguished by his excesses, that he was the aversion of all the discreeter part of the city. He led a life of continual intemperance and dissipation. His days were given up to feasting and amusements, his nights to riot and intoxication. He was constantly surrounded by a set of loose young men, who imitated and encouraged his vices; and when they had totally drowned the little reason they possessed, in copious draughts of wine, they were accustomed to sally out, and practise every species of absurd and licentious frolic. One morning they were thus wandering about, after having spent the night as usual, when they beheld a great concourse of people, who were listening to the discourses of a celebrated philosopher named Xenocrates. The greater part of the young men, who still retained some sense of shame, were so struck with this spectacle, that they

turned out of the way; but Polemo, who was more daring and abandoned than the rest, pressed forward into the midst of the audience. His figure was too remarkable not to attract universal notice; for his head was crowned with flowers, his robe hung negligently about him, and his whole body was reeking with perfumes; besides, his look and manners were such as very little qualified him for such a company. Many of the audience were so displeased at this interruption, that they were ready to treat the young man with great severity; but the venerable philosopher prevailed upon them not to molest the intruder, and calmly continued his discourse, which happened to be upon the dignity and advantage of temperance. As he proceeded, he descanted upon this subject with so much force and eloquence, that the young man became more composed and attentive, as it were, in spite of himself. Presently, as the sage grew still more animated in his representation of the shameful slavery which attends the giving way to our passions, and the sublime happiness of reducing them all to order, the countenance of Polemo began to change, and the expression of it to be softened. He cast his eyes in mournful silence upon the ground, as if in deep repentance for his own contemptible conduct. Still the philosopher increased in vehemence; he seemed to be animated with the sacred genius of the art which he professed, and to exercise an irresistible power over the minds of his hearers. He drew the portrait of an ingenuous and modest young man, who had been bred up to virtuous toils and manly hardiness. He painted him triumphant over all his passions,

and trampling upon human fears and weakness. Should his country be invaded, you see him fly to its defence, and ready to pour forth all his blood. Calm and composed, he appears with a terrible beauty in the front of danger, the ornament and bulwark of his country. The thickest squadrons are penetrated by his resistless valour, and he points the paths of victory to his admiring followers. Should he fall in battle, how glorious is his lot! to be cut off in the honourable discharge of his duty, to be wept by all the brave and virtuous, and to survive in the eternal records of fame! While Xenocrates was thus discoursing, Polemo seemed to be transported with a sacred enthusiasm; his eyes flashed fire, his countenance glowed with martial indignation, and the whole expression of his person was changed. Presently, the philosopher, who had remarked the effects of his discourse, painted in no less glowing colours, the life and manners of an effeminate young man. 'Unhappy youth,' said he, 'what words shall I find equal to thy abasement? Thou art the reproach of thy parents, the disgrace of thy country, the scorn or pity of every generous mind. How is nature dishonoured in thy person, and all her choicest gifts abortive! That strength, which would have rendered thee the glory of thy city, and the terror of her foes, is basely thrown away on luxury and intemperance; thy youth and beauty are wasted in riot, and prematurely blasted by disease. Instead of the eye of fire, the port of intrepidity, the step of modest firmness, a squalid paleness sits upon thy face, a bloated corpulency enfeebles thy limbs, and presents a picture of human

nature in its most abject state. But hark! the trumpet sounds; a savage band of unrelenting enemies have surrounded the city, and are prepared to scatter flames and ruin through the whole! The virtuous youth, who have been educated to nobler cares, arm with generous emulation, and fly to its defence. How lovely do they appear, drest in resplendent arms, and moving slowly on, in a close, impenetrable phalanx! They are animated by every motive which can give energy to a human breast, and lift it to the sublimest achievements. Their hoary sires, their venerable magistrates, the beauteous forms of trembling virgins, attend them to the war, with prayers and acclamations. Go forth, ye generous bands, secure to meet the rewards of victory, or the repose of honourable death! Go forth, ye generous bands, but unaccompanied by the wretch I have described. His feeble arm refuses to bear the ponderous shield; the pointed spear sinks feebly from his grasp; he trembles at the noise and tumult of the war, and flies, like the hunted hart, to lurk in shades and darkness. Behold him roused from his midnight orgies, reeking with wine and odours, and crowned with flowers, the only trophies of his warfare; he hurries with trembling steps across the city; his voice, his gait, his whole deportment proclaim the abject slave of intemperance, and stamp indelible infamy upon his name.

“While Xenocrates was thus discoursing, Polemo listened with fixed attention: the former animation of his countenance gave way to a visible dejection; presently his lips trembled and his cheeks grew pale; he was lost in melancholy recollection, and a silent

tear was observed to trickle down. But when the philosopher described a character so like his own, shame seemed to take entire possession of his soul, and rousing, as from a long and painful lethargy, he softly raised his hands to his head, and tore away the chaplets of flowers, the monuments of his effeminacy and disgrace; he seemed content to compose his dress into a more decent form, and wrapped his robe about him, that before hung loosely, waving with an air of studied effeminacy. But when Xenocrates had finished his discourse, Polemo approached him with all the humility of conscious guilt, and begged to become his disciple; telling him that he had that day gained the most glorious conquest that had ever been achieved by reason and philosophy, by inspiring with the love of virtue a mind that had been hitherto plunged in folly and sensuality. Xenocrates embraced the young man, encouraged him in such a laudable design, and admitted him among his disciples. Nor had he ever reason to repent of his facility; for Polemo from that hour abandoned all his former companions and vices, and by his uncommon ardour for improvement, very soon became as celebrated for virtue and wisdom, as he had before been for every contrary quality."

"Thus," added Mr. Barlow, "you see how little reason there is to despair of youth, even in the most disadvantageous circumstances. It has been justly observed, that few know all they are capable of: the seeds of different qualities frequently lie concealed in the character, and only wait for an opportunity of

exerting themselves; and it is the great business of education, to apply such motives to the imagination as may stimulate it to laudable exertions. For thus the same activity of mind, the same impetuosity of temper, which, by being improperly applied, would only form a wild ungovernable character, may produce the steadiest virtue, and prove a blessing both to the individual and his country."

"I am infinitely obliged to you for this story," said Mr. Merton; "and as my son will certainly find a Xenocrates in you, I wish that you may have reason to think him in some degree a Polemo. But, since you are so kind as to present me these agreeable hopes, do not leave the work unfinished, but tell me what you think the best method of treating him in his present critical situation."

"That," said Mr. Barlow, "must depend, I think, upon the workings of his own mind. He has always appeared to me generous and humane, and to have a fund of natural goodness, amid all the faults which spring up too luxuriantly in his character. It is impossible that he should not be at present possessed with the keenest shame for his own behaviour. It will be your first part to take advantage of these sentiments, and, instead of a fleeting and transitory sensation, to change them into fixed and active principles. Do not at present say much to him upon the subject. Let us both be attentive to the silent workings of his mind, and regulate our behaviour accordingly."

This conversation being finished, Mr. Merton introduced Mr. Barlow to the company in the other

room. Mrs. Merton, who now began to be a little staggered in some of the opinions she had been most fond of, received him with uncommon civility, and all the rest of the company treated him with the greatest respect. But Tommy, who had lately been the oracle and the admiration of all this brilliant circle, appeared to have lost all his vivacity. He indeed advanced to meet Mr. Barlow with a look of tenderness and gratitude, and made the most respectful answers to all his enquiries; but his eyes were involuntarily turned to the ground, and silent melancholy and dejection were visible in his face. Mr. Barlow remarked, with the greatest pleasure, these signs of humility and contrition, and pointed them out to Mr. Merton, the first time he had an opportunity of speaking to him without being overheard; adding, that, unless he was much deceived, Tommy would soon give ample proofs of the natural goodness of his character, and reconcile himself to all his friends. Mr. Merton heard this observation with the greatest pleasure, and now began to entertain some hopes of seeing it accomplished.

After the dinner was over, most of the young gentlemen went away to their respective homes. Tommy seemed to have lost much of the enthusiasm which he had lately felt for his polite and accomplished friends; he even appeared to feel a secret joy at their departure, and answered with a visible coldness, all their professions of regard and repeated invitations. Even Mrs. Compton herself and Miss Matilda, who were also departing, found him as insensible as the rest;

though they did not spare the most extravagant praises, and the warmest professions of regard.

And now the ceremonies of taking leave being over, and most of the visitors departed, a sudden solitude seemed to have taken possession of the house, which was lately the seat of noise, and bustle, and festivity. Mr. and Mrs. Merton and Mr. Barlow were left alone with Miss Simmons and Tommy, and one or two others of the smaller gentry who had not yet returned to their friends. As Mr. Barlow was not fond of cards, Mr. Merton proposed, after the tea-table was removed, that Miss Simmons, who was famous for reading well, should entertain the company with some little tale or history, adapted to the comprehension even of the youngest. Miss Simmons excused herself with the greatest modesty; but, upon Mrs. Merton's joining in the request, she instantly complied, and fetching down a book, read the following story of

SOPHRON AND TIGRANES.

SOPHRON and Tigranes were the children of two neighbouring shepherds, who fed their flocks in that part of Asia which borders upon mount Lebanon. They were accustomed to each other from their earliest infancy; and the continual habit of conversing, at length produced a tender and intimate friendship. Sophron was the larger and more robust of the two; his look was firm, but modest, his countenance placid, and his eyes were such as inspired confidence and attachment. He excelled most of the youth of the

neighbourhood in every species of violent exercise, such as wrestling, boxing, and whirling heavy weights; but his triumphs were constantly mixed with so much humanity and courtesy, that even those who found themselves vanquished, could feel no envy towards their conqueror. On the contrary, Tigranes was of a character totally different. His body was less strong than that of Sophron, but excellently proportioned, and adapted to every species of fatigue. His countenance was full of fire, but displeased by an excess of confidence; and his eyes sparkled with sense and meaning, but bore too great an expression of uncontrolled fierceness. Nor were these two youths less different in the application of their faculties than in the nature of them; for Tigranes seemed to be possessed by a restless spirit of commanding all his equals, while Sophron, contented with the enjoyment of tranquillity, desired nothing more than to avoid oppression.

Still, as they assisted their parents in leading every morning their flocks to pasture, they entertained each other with rural sports, or, lying under the shade of arching rocks, during the heat of the day, conversed with all the ease of childish friendship. Their observations were not many; they were chiefly drawn from the objects of nature which surrounded them, or from the simple modes of life to which they had been witness; but even here the diversity of their characters was sufficiently expressed. "See," said Tigranes one day, as he cast his eyes upwards to the cliffs of a neighbouring rock, "that eagle which rises into the immense regions of air, till he absolutely

soars beyond the reach of sight; were I a bird, I should choose to resemble him, that I might traverse the clouds with the rapidity of a whirlwind, and dart like lightning upon my prey."

"That eagle," answered Sophron, "is the emblem of violence and injustice; he is the enemy of every bird, and even of every beast, that is weaker than himself: were I to choose, I should prefer the life of yonder swan, that moves so smoothly and inoffensively along the river: he is strong enough to defend himself from injury, without oppressing others; and, therefore, he is neither feared nor insulted by other animals."

While he was yet speaking, the eagle, who had been hovering in the air, darted suddenly down at some distance, and seizing a lamb, was bearing it away in his cruel talons; when, almost in the same instant, the shepherd, who had been watching all his motions from a neighbouring hill, let fly an arrow from his bow, with so unerring an aim, that it pierced the body of the bird, and brought him headlong to the ground, writhing in the agonies of death.

"This," said Sophron, "I have often heard, is the fate of ambitious people; while they are endeavouring to mount beyond their fellows, they are stopped by some unforeseen misfortune."

"For my part," said Tigranes, "I would rather perish in the middle of the sky, than enjoy an age of life, basely chained down and grovelling upon the surface of the earth."

"What we either may enjoy," answered Sophron, "is in the hand of Heaven; but may I rather creep

during life, than mount to commit injustice and oppress the innocent!"

In this manner passed the early years of the two friends. As they grew up to manhood, the difference of their tempers became more visible, and gradually alienated them from each other. Tigranes began to despise the uniform labours of a shepherd, and the humble occupations of the country. His sheep were neglected, and frequently wandered over the plains, without a leader to guard them in the day, or bring them back at night. The young man was in the mean time employed in climbing rocks, or traversing the forest, to seek for eagles' nests, or pierce with his arrows the different wild animals which inhabit the woods. If he heard the horn of the hunter, or the cry of hounds, it was impossible to restrain his eagerness. He regarded neither the summer's sun nor the winter's frost, while he was pursuing his game. The thickest woods, the steepest mountains, the deepest rivers, were unable to stop him in his career. He triumphed over every danger and difficulty with such an invincible courage, as made him at once an object of terror and admiration to all the youth in the neighbourhood. His friend Sophron alone beheld his exploits neither with terror nor admiration. Of all his comrades, Sophron was the only one whom Tigranes still continued to respect; for he knew that with a gentleness of temper which scarcely any thing could exasperate, he possessed the firmest courage, and a degree of bodily strength which rendered that courage invincible. He affected, indeed, to despise the virtuous moderation of his friend, and ridiculed

it, with some of his looser comrades, as an abject pusillanimity; but he felt himself humbled whenever he was in his company, as before a superior being, and therefore gradually estranged himself from his society.

Sophron, on the contrary, entertained the sincerest regard for his friend; but he knew his defects, and trembled for the consequences which the violence and ambition of his character might one day produce. Whenever Tigranes abandoned his flocks, or left his rustic tasks undone, Sophron had the goodness to supply whatever he had omitted. Such was the vigour of his constitution, that he was indefatigable in every labour; nor did he ever exert his force more willingly, than in performing these voluntary duties to his absent friend. Whenever he met with Tigranes, he accosted him in the gentlest manner, and endeavoured to win him back to his former habits and manners. He represented to him the injury he did his parents, and the disquietude he occasioned in their minds, by thus abandoning the duties of his profession. He sometimes, but with the greatest mildness, hinted at the coldness with which Tigranes treated him; and reminded his friend of the pleasing intercourse of their childhood. But all his remonstrances were vain; Tigranes heard him at first with coolness, then with impatience or contempt, and, at last, avoided him altogether.

Sophron had a lamb which he had formerly saved from the devouring jaws of a wolf, which had already bitten him in several places, and destroyed his dam.

The tenderness with which this benevolent young man had nursed and fed him during his infancy, had so attached him to his master, that he seemed to prefer his society to that of his own species. Wherever Sophron went, the faithful lamb accompanied him like his dogs, lay down beside him when he reposed, and followed close behind when he drove the rest of the flock to pasture. Sophron was equally attached to his dumb companion; he often diverted himself with his innocent gambols, fed him with the choicest herbs out of his hands, and when he slept at night, the lamb was sure to repose beside him.

It happened about this time, that Tigranes, as he was one day exploring the woods, discovered the den of a she-wolf, in which she had left her young ones while she went to search for prey. By a caprice that was natural to his temper, he chose out the largest of the whelps, carried it home to his house, and brought it up, as if it had been a useful or harmless animal. While it was yet but young, it was incapable of doing mischief; but, as it increased in age and strength, it began to show signs of a bloody and untameable disposition, and made all the neighbouring shepherds tremble for the safety of their flocks. But as the courage and fierceness of Tigranes had now rendered him formidable to all his associates, and the violence of his temper made him impatient of all opposition, they did not speak to him upon the subject; and as to his own parents, he had long learned to treat them with indifference or contempt. Sophron alone, who was not to be awed by fear, observing the just apprehensions of the neighbourhood, undertook the

task of expostulating with his friend, and endeavoured to prevail upon him to part with a beast so justly odious, and which might in the end prove fatal, whenever his natural rage should break out into open acts of slaughter. Tigranes heard him with a sneer of derision, and only answered, that, if a parcel of miserable rustics diverted themselves with keeping sheep, he, who had a more elevated soul, might surely entertain a nobler animal, for his diversion. "But should that nobler animal prove a public mischief," coolly replied Sophron, "you must expect that he will be treated as a public enemy." "Woe be to the man," answered Tigranes, brandishing his javelin and sternly frowning, "that shall dare to meddle with any thing that belongs to me!" Saying this, he turned his back upon Sophron, and left him with disdain.

It was not long before the very event took place which had been so long foreseen. The wolf of Tigranes, either impelled by the accidental taste of blood, or by the natural fierceness of his own temper, fell one day upon the sheep with such an unexpected degree of fury, that he slaughtered thirty of them before it was possible to prevent him. Sophron happened at that time to be within view; he ran with amazing swiftness to the place, and found the savage bathed in blood, tearing the carcass of a lamb which he had just slain. At the approach of the daring youth the wolf began to utter a dismal cry, and quitting his prey, seemed to prepare himself for a slaughter of another kind. Sophron was entirely unarmed, and the size and fury of the beast which

rushed forward to attack him, might well have excused him had he declined the combat. But he, consulting only his native courage, wrapped his shepherd's cloak around his left arm, to resist the first onset of his enemy, and, with a determined look and nimble pace, advanced towards his threatening adversary. In an instant the wolf sprang upon him, with a horrid yell; but Sophron nimbly eluded his attack, and suddenly throwing his vigorous arms about the body of his adversary, compelled him to struggle for his own safety. It was then that he uttered cries more dreadful than before; and as he writhed about in all the agitations of pain and madness, he gnashed his terrible teeth with impotent attempts to bite; while the blood and foam which issued from his jaws, rendered his figure still more horrible than before. But Sophron, with undaunted courage, still maintained his hold, and, grasping him with irresistible strength, prevented him from using either his teeth or claws in his own defence. It was not long before the struggles and violence of the wolf grew perceptibly weaker from fatigue, and he seemed to wish to decline a further combat with so formidable a foe, could he have found means to escape. Sophron then collected all his strength, and, seizing his fainting adversary by the neck and throat, grasped him still tighter in his terrible hands, till the beast, incapable either of disengaging himself or breathing, yielded up the contest and his life together.

It was almost in this moment, that Tigranes passed that way, and unexpectedly was witness to

the triumphs of Sophron, and the miserable end of his favourite. Inflamed with pride and indignation, he uttered dreadful imprecations against his friend, who, in vain, attempted to explain the transaction; and, rushing upon him with all the madness of inveterate hate, aimed a javelin at his bosom. Sophron was calm as he was brave; he saw the necessity of defending his own life against the attacks of a perfidious friend; and, with a nimble spring, at once eluded the weapon, and closed with his antagonist. The combat was then more equal; for each was reduced to depend upon his own strength and activity. They struggled for some time with all the efforts which disappointed rage could inspire on the one side, and a virtuous indignation on the other. At length the fortune, or rather the force and coolness of Sophron, prevailed over the blind impetuous fury of Tigranes; he at once exerted his whole remaining strength with such success, that he hurled his adversary to the ground, where he lay bleeding, vanquished, and unable to rise. "Thou scarcely," said Sophron, "deservest thy life from my hands, who couldst so wantonly and unjustly attempt to deprive me of mine; however, I will rather remember thy early merits than thy recent injuries."

"No," replied the raging Tigranes, "load me not with thy odious benefits, but rather rid me of a life which I abhor, since thou hast robbed me of my honour."

"I will never hurt thee," replied Sophron, "but in my own just defence; live to make a better use of life, and to have juster ideas of honour." Saying

this, he assisted Tigranes to rise; but finding his temper full of implacable resentment, he turned another way, and left him to go home alone.

It was not long after this event, that a company of soldiers marched across the plains where Sophron was feeding his flocks, and halted to refresh themselves under the shade of some spreading trees. The officer who commanded them was struck with the comely figure and expressive countenance of Sophron. He called the young man to him, and endeavoured to enflame him with a military ardour, by setting before him the glory which might be acquired by arms, and ridiculing the obscurity of a country life. When he thought he had sufficiently excited his admiration, he proposed to him that he should enrol himself in his company, and promised him every encouragement which he thought most likely to engage the passions of a young man. Sophron thanked him with humility for his offers, but told him, that he had an aged father, who was now become incapable of maintaining himself; and therefore that he could accept of no offers, however advantageous they might appear, which would interfere with the discharge of this duty. The officer replied, and ridiculed the scruples of the young man; but finding him inflexible in his resolution, he at last turned from him with an air of contempt, and called his men to follow him, muttering, as he went, reflections upon the stupidity and cowardice of Sophron.

The party had not proceeded far, before, by ill fortune, they came to the place where his favourite lamb was feeding; and as he had not yet learned to

dread the cruelty of the human species, he advanced towards them with all the confidence of unsuspecting innocence. "This is a lucky accident," cried one of the soldiers with a brutal satisfaction; "fortune was not willing that we should go without a supper, and has therefore sent us a present." "A happy exchange," answered a second; "a fat sheep instead of a lubberly shepherd; and the coward will no doubt think himself happy to sleep in a whole skin at so small an expence." Saying this, he took the lamb, and bore it away in triumph; uttering a thousand threats and execrations against the master, if he should dare to reclaim it. Sophron was not so far removed as to escape the sight of the indignity which was offered him. He followed the troop with so much swiftness, that it was not long before he overtook the soldier who was bearing away his friend, and, from his load, marched rather behind the rest. When Sophron approached him, he accosted him in the gentlest manner, and besought him, in words that might have touched any one but a savage, to restore his favourite. He even offered, when he found nothing else would avail, to purchase back his own property with something of greater value. But the barbarous soldier, inured to scenes of misery, and little accustomed to yield to human entreaties, only laughed at his complaints, and loaded him with additional insults. At length he began to be tired with his importunities, and, drawing his sword, and waving it before the eyes of Sophron, threatened, that, if he did not depart immediately, he would use him as he intended to do the lamb.

“And do you think,” answered Sophron, “that, while I have an arm to lift, or a drop of blood in my veins, I will suffer you, or any man, to rob me of what I value more than life?”

The soldier, exasperated at such an insolent reply, as he termed it, aimed a blow at Sophron with his sword, which he turned aside with a stick he held in his hand, so that it glanced inoffensively down; and before he could recover the use of his weapon, Sophron, who was infinitely stronger, closed in with him, wrested it out of his hands, and hurled him roughly to the ground. Some of the comrades of the vanquished soldier came in an instant to his assistance, and, without enquiring into the merits of the cause, drew their swords, and began to assail the undaunted young man. But he, brandishing the weapon which he had just seized, appeared ready to defend himself with so much strength and courage, that they did not choose to come too near. While they were thus engaged, the officer, who had turned back at the first noise of the affray, approached, and, ordering his men to desist, enquired into the occasion of the contest. Sophron then recounted, with so much modesty and respect, the indignities and insults he had received, and the unprovoked attack of the soldier, which had obliged him to defend his own life, that the officer, who had a real respect for courage, was charmed with the behaviour of the young man. He therefore reprov'd his men for their disorderly manners, praised the intrepidity of Sophron, and ordered his sword to be restored to him, with which he joyfully departed.

Sophron was scarcely out of sight, when Tigranes, who was then by accident returning from the chase, met the same party upon their march. Their military attire and glittering arms instantly struck his mind with admiration. He stopped to gaze upon them as they passed; and the officer, who remarked the martial air and well-proportioned limbs of Tigranes, entered into conversation with him, and made him the same proposals which he had before done to Sophron. Such incentives were irresistible to a vain and ambitious mind: the young man in an instant forgot his friends, his country, and his parents, and marched away with all the pleasure that strong presumption and aspiring hopes could raise. Nor was it long before he had an opportunity of signalizing his intrepidity. Asia was at that time overrun by numerous bands of savage warriors, under different and independent chiefs. That country, which has in every age been celebrated for the mildness of the climate and the fertility of the soil, seems to be destined to groan under all the horrors of eternal servitude. Whether these effects are merely produced by fortune, or whether the natural advantages it enjoys have a necessary tendency to soften the minds of the inhabitants to sloth and effeminacy, it is certain that the people of Asia have in general been the unresisting prey of every invader. At this time several fierce and barbarous nations had broken in upon its territory; and, after covering its fertile plains with carnage and desolation, were contending with each other for the superiority.

Under the most enterprising of these rival chiefs was Tigranes now enrolled, and in the very first engagement at which he was present, he gave such uncommon proofs of valour, that he was distinguished by the general with marks of particular regard, and became the admiration of all his comrades. Under the banners of this adventurous warrior did Tigranes toil with various fortunes, during the space of many years: sometimes victorious in the fight, sometimes baffled; at one time crowned with conquest and glory, at another beset with dangers, covered with wounds, and hunted like a wild beast through rocks and forests. Yet still the native courage of his temper sustained his spirits, and kept him firm in the profession which he had chosen. At length, in a decisive battle, in which the chieftain under whom Tigranes had enlisted contended with the most powerful of his rivals, he had the honour of retrieving the victory, when his own party seemed totally routed; and, after having penetrated the thickest squadrons of the enemy, to kill their general with his own hand. From this moment he seemed to be in possession of all that his ambition could desire. He was appointed general of all the troops, under the chief himself, whose repeated victories had rendered him equal in power to the most celebrated monarchs. Nor did his fortune stop even here; for after a number of successive battles, in which his party were generally victorious by his experience and intrepidity, he was, upon the unexpected death of the chief, unanimously chosen by the whole nation to succeed him.

In the mean time Sophron, free from envy, avarice,

or ambition, pursued the natural impulse of his character, and contented himself with a life of virtuous obscurity. He passed his time in rural labours, in watching his flocks, and in attending, with all the duty of an affectionate child, upon his aged parents. Every morning he rose with the sun, and spreading his innocent arms to heaven, thanked that Being which has created all nature, for the continuance of life and health, and all the blessings he enjoyed. His piety and virtue were rewarded with every thing which a temperate and rational mind can ask. All his rural labours succeeded in the amplest manner; his flocks were the fairest, the most healthy and numerous of the district; he was loved and esteemed by the youth of the neighbourhood, and equally respected by the aged, who pointed him out as the example of every virtue to their families. But what was more dear than all the rest to such a mind as Sophron's, was to see himself the joy, the comfort, and support of his parents, who frequently embraced him with tears, and supplicated the Deity to reward such duty and affection with all his choicest blessings.

Nor was his humanity confined to his own species; the innocent inhabitants of the forest were safe from the pursuit of Sophron, and all that lived under his protection were sure to meet with distinguished tenderness. "It is enough," said Sophron, "that the innocent sheep supplies me with his fleece, to form my winter garments, and defend me from the cold; I will not bereave him of his little life, nor stop his harmless gambols on the green, to gratify a guilty sensuality. It is surely enough that the stately heifer

affords me copious streams of pure and wholesome food; I will not arm my hand against her innocent existence; I will not pollute myself with her blood, nor tear her warm and panting flesh, with a cruelty that we abhor even in savage beasts. More wholesome, more adapted to human life, are the spontaneous fruits which liberal nature produces for the sustenance of man, or which the earth affords to recompense his labours."

Here the interest and concern which had been long visible in Tommy's face, could no longer be repressed, and tears began to trickle down his cheeks. "What is the matter, my darling," said his mother, "what is there in the account of this young man, that so deeply interests and affects you?" "Alas!" said Tommy, "mamma, it reminds me of poor Harry Sandford; just such another good young man will he be, when he is as old as Sophron; and I, and I," added he, sobbing, "am just such another worthless, ungrateful wretch, as Tigranes." "But Tigranes," said Mrs. Merton, "you see, became a great and powerful man, while Sophron remained only a poor and ignorant shepherd." "What does that signify, mamma?" said Tommy: "for my part, I begin to find that it is not always the greatest people that are the best or happiest; and as to ignorance, I cannot think that Sophron, who understood his duty so well to his parents, and to God, and to all the world, could be called ignorant, and very likely he could read and write better than Tigranes, in spite of all his pomp and grandeur; for I am sure there is not

one of the young gentlemen that went home to-day, who reads as well as Harry Sandford, or has half his understanding." Mr. Merton could hardly help smiling at Tommy's conjecture about Sophron's reading; but he felt the greatest pleasure at seeing such a change in his sentiments, and looking at him with more cordiality than he had done before, he told him that he was very happy to find him so sensible of his faults, and hoped he would be equally ready to amend them. Miss Simmons then continued her narrative.

If Sophron ever permitted himself to shed the blood of living creatures, it was of those ferocious animals that wage continual war with every other species. Amid the mountains which he inhabited, there were rugged cliffs and inaccessible caverns, which afforded retreat to wolves, and bears, and tigers. Sometimes, amid the storms and snows of winter, they felt themselves pinched by hunger, and fell, with almost irresistible fury, upon the nearest flocks and herds. Not only sheep and oxen were slaughtered in these dreadful and unexpected attacks, but even the shepherds themselves were frequently the victims of their rage. If there was time to assemble for their defence, the boldest of the youth would frequently seize their arms, and give battle to the invaders. In this warfare, which was equally just and honourable, Sophron was always foremost; his unequalled strength and courage made all the youth adopt him as their leader, and march with confidence under his command. And so successful were his expeditions, that

he always returned loaded with the skins of vanquished enemies, and by his vigilance and intrepidity, at length either killed or drove away most of the beasts from which any danger was to be feared.

It happened one day that Sophron had been following the chase of a wolf, which had made some depredations upon the flocks, and, in the ardour of his pursuit, was separated from all his companions. He was too well acquainted with the roughest parts of the neighbouring mountains, and too indifferent to danger, to be disturbed at this circumstance; he therefore followed his flying foe with so much impetuosity, that he completely lost every track and mark with which he was acquainted. As it is difficult, in a wild and uncultivated district, to find the path again when once it is lost, Sophron only wandered further from his home the more he endeavoured to return. He found himself bewildered and entangled in a dreary wilderness, where he was every instant stopped by torrents that tumbled from the neighbouring cliffs, or in danger of slipping down precipices of an immense height. He was alone, in the midst of a gloomy forest, where human industry had never penetrated, nor the woodman's axe been heard, since the moment of its creation; to add to his distress, the setting sun disappeared in the west, and the shades of night gathered gradually round, accompanied with the roar of savage beasts. Sophron found himself beset with terrors, but his soul was incapable of fear; he poised his javelin in his hand, and forced his way through every opposition, till at length, with infinite difficulty,

he disengaged himself from the forest, just as the last glimmer of light was yet visible in the skies.

But it was in vain that he had thus escaped; he cast his eyes around, but could discern nothing but an immense tract of country, rough with rocks and overhung with forests, but destitute of every mark of cultivation or inhabitants. He however pursued his way along the side of the mountain till he descended into a pleasant valley, free from trees and watered by a winding stream. Here he was going to repose for the remainder of the night, under the crag of an impending rock, when a rising gleam of light darted suddenly into the skies for a considerable distance, and attracted his curiosity. Sophron looked towards the quarter whence it came, and plainly discerned that it was a fire, kindled either by some benighted traveller like himself, or by some less innocent wanderers of the dark. He determined to approach the light, but knowing the unsettled state of all the neighbouring districts, he thought it prudent to advance with caution. He therefore made a considerable circuit, and by clambering along the higher grounds, discovered a hanging wood, under whose thick covert he approached without being discovered, within a little distance of the fire. He then perceived that a party of soldiers were reposing round a flaming pile of wood, and carousing at their ease; all about was strewn the plunder which they had accumulated in their march, and in the midst was seated a venerable old man, accompanied by a beautiful young woman. Sophron easily comprehended, by the dejection of their countenances, and the tears which trickled down the

maiden's cheeks, as well as by the insolence with which they were treated, that they were prisoners. The virtuous indignation of his temper was instantly excited, and he determined to attempt their deliverance. But this, in spite of all his intrepidity, he perceived was no easy matter to accomplish. He was alone and weakly armed; his enemies, though not numerous, too many for him to flatter himself with any rational hope of success by open force; and should he make a fruitless effort, he might rashly throw his life away, and only aggravate the distresses he sought to cure. With this consideration he restrained his natural impetuosity, and, at length, determined to attempt by stratagem, what he thought could scarcely be performed by force. He therefore silently withdrew, and skirted the side of the wood which had concealed him, carefully remarking every circumstance of the way, till he had ascended a mountain, which immediately fronted the camp of the soldiers, at no considerable distance. He happened to have by his side a kind of battle-axe which they use in the chase of bears; with this he applied himself to lopping the branches of trees, collecting, at the same time, all the fallen ones he could find, till, in a short time, he had reared several piles of wood upon the most conspicuous part of the mountain, and full in the view of the soldiers. He then easily kindled a blaze by rubbing two decayed branches together, and in an instant all the piles were blazing with so many streams of light, that the neighbouring hills and forests were illuminated with the gleam. Sophron knew the nature of man, always prone to sudden impressions of fear

and terror, more particularly amid the obscurity of the night, and promised himself the amplest success from his stratagem. In the mean time he hastened back with all the speed he could use, till he reached the very wood where he had lurked before; he then raised his voice, which was naturally loud and clear, and shouted several times successively with all his exertion. A hundred echoes from the neighbouring cliffs and caverns returned the sound, with a reverberation that made it appear like the noise of a mighty squadron.

The soldiers, who had been alarmed by the sudden blaze of so many fires, which they attributed to a numerous band of troops, were now impressed with such a panic, that they fled in confusion. They imagined themselves surrounded by their enemies, who were bursting in on every side, and fled with so much precipitation, that they were dispersed in an instant, and left the prisoners to themselves. Sophron, who saw from a small distance all their motions, did not wait for them to be undeceived, but running to the spot they had abandoned, explained in a few words, to the trembling and amazed captives, the nature of his stratagem, and exhorted them to fly with all the swiftness they were able to exert. Few entreaties were necessary to prevail upon them to comply; they therefore arose and followed Sophron, who led them a considerable way up into the mountains, and when he thought them out of the immediate danger of pursuit, they sheltered themselves in a rocky cavern, and determined there to wait for the light of the morning.

When they were thus in a place of safety, the venerable old man seized the hand of Sophron, and, bedewing it with his tears, gave way to the strong emotions of gratitude which overwhelmed his mind. "Generous youth," said he, "I know not by what extraordinary fortune you have thus been able to effect our deliverance, when we imagined ourselves out of the reach of human succour; but, if the uniform gratitude and affection of two human beings, who perhaps are not entirely unworthy your regard, can be any recompence for such a distinguished act of virtue, you may command our lives, and employ them in your service."

"Father," answered Sophron, "you infinitely overrate the merits of the service which chance has enabled me to perform. I am but little acquainted with my fellow-creatures, as having always inhabited these mountains; but I cannot conceive that any other man who had been witness to your distress, would have refused to attempt your rescue: and, as to all the rest, the obscurity of the night, and peculiarity of the situation, rendered it a work of little difficulty or danger." Sophron then recounted to his new friends the accident which had brought him to that unfrequented spot, and made him an unperceived witness of their captivity; he also explained the nature of the stratagem, by which, alone and unsupported, he had been enabled to disperse their enemies. He added, "that if he appeared to have any little merit in their eyes, he should be amply recompensed by being admitted to their friendship and confidence." With these mutual professions of esteem

they thought it prudent to terminate a conversation, which, however agreeable, was not entirely free from danger, as some of their late oppressors might happen to distinguish their voices, and, thus directed to their lurking-place, exact a severe revenge for the terrors they had undergone.

With the first ray of morning the three companions arose, and Sophron, leading them along the skirts of the mountains, where bushes and brushwood concealed them from observation, and still following the windings of the river as a guide, they at length came to a cultivated spot, though deserted by its inhabitants, from the fear of the party they had just escaped. Here they made a slight and hardy repast upon some coarse provisions which they found, and instantly struck again into the woods, which they judged safer than the plain. But Sophron fortunately recollected that he had formerly visited this village with his father, while yet a child, and before the country had suffered the rage of barbarous invasions. It was a long day's march from home, but by exerting all their force, they at length arrived, through rough and secret paths, at the hospitable cottage where Sophron and his parents dwelt. Here they were joyfully received, as the long absence of the young man had much alarmed his parents, and made all the hamlet anxious concerning his safety. That night they comfortably reposed in a place of safety, and the next morning, after a plentiful but coarse repast, the father of Sophron again congratulated his guests upon their fortunate escape, and entreated them to let him hear the history of their misfortunes.

“I can refuse nothing,” said the venerable stranger, “to persons to whom I am under such extraordinary obligations, although the history of my life is short and simple, and contains little worthy to be recited. My name is Chares, and I was born in one of the maritime cities of Asia, of opulent parents, who died while I was yet a youth. The loss of my parents, to whom I was most affectionately attached, made so strong an impression upon my mind, that I determined to seek relief in travel, and, for that purpose, sold my paternal estate, the price of which I converted into money and jewels, as being most portable. My father had been a man distinguished for his knowledge and abilities, and from him I imbibed an early desire of improvement, which has always been my greatest comfort and support. The first place, therefore, which I visited was Egypt, a country renowned in every age for its invention of all the arts which contribute to support or adorn human life. There I resided several years, giving up my time to the study of philosophy, and to the conversation of the many eminent men who resorted thither from all the regions of the world. This country is one immense plain, divided by the Nile, which is one of the noblest rivers in the world, and pours its tide along the middle of its territory. Every year, at a particular season, the stream begins gradually to swell, with such an increase of waters, that at length it rises over its banks, and the whole extent of Egypt becomes an immense lake, where buildings, temples, and cities, appear as floating upon the inundation. Nor is this event a subject

of dread to the inhabitants; on the contrary, the overflowing of their river is a day of public rejoicing to all the natives, which they celebrate with songs and dances, and every symptom of extravagant joy. Nor is this to be wondered at, when you are informed, that this inundation renders the soil it covers the most abundant in the world. Whatever land is covered by the waters, receives such an increase of fertility as never to disappoint the hopes of the industrious husbandman. The instant the waters have retired, the farmer returns to his fields, and begins the operations of agriculture. These labours are not very difficult in a soft and yielding slime, such as the river leaves behind it. The seeds are sown, and vegetate with inconceivable rapidity, and in a few weeks, an abundant harvest of every kind of grain covers the land. For this reason, all the necessaries of life are easily procured by the innumerable multitudes which inhabit the country.

“Nor is the climate less favourable than the soil, for here an eternal spring and summer seem to have fixed their abode. No frost, or snow, is ever known to chill the atmosphere, which is always perfumed with the smell of aromatic plants that grow on every side, and bring on a pleasing forgetfulness of human care. But, alas! these blessings, great as they may appear, produce the effect of curses upon the inhabitants. The ease and plenty which they enjoy enervate their manners, and destroy all vigour both of body and mind. No one is here inflamed with the sacred love of his country, or of public liberty; no one is inured to arms, or taught to prefer

his honour to his life. The great business of existence is an inglorious indolence, a lethargy of mind, and a continual suspense from all exertion. The very children catch the contagion from their parents; they are instructed in every effeminate art: to dance in soft, unmanly attitudes, to modulate their voice by musical instruments, and to adjust the floating drapery of their dress; these are the arts in which both sexes are instructed from their infancy. But no one is taught to wield the arms of men, to tame the noble steeds in which the country abounds, to observe his rank in war, or to bear the indispensable hardships of a military life. Hence this celebrated country, which has been in every age the admiration of mankind, is destined to the most degrading servitude. A few thousand disciplined troops are sufficient to hold the many millions it contains in bondage, under which they groan, without ever conceiving the design of vindicating their natural rights by arms.

“Unhappy people!” exclaimed Sophron, “how useless to them are all the blessings of their climate! How much rather would I inhabit the stormy top of Lebanon, amid eternal snows and barrenness, than wallow in the vile sensuality of such a country, or breathe an air infected by its vices!”

Chares was charmed with the generous indignation of Sophron, and thus continued:—“I was of the same opinion with yourself, and therefore determined to leave a country which all its natural advantages could not render agreeable, when I understood the manners of its inhabitants. But, before I quitted that part of the globe, my curiosity led me to visit the

neighbouring tribes of Arabia, a nation bordering upon the Egyptians, but as different in spirits and manners, as the hardy shepherds of these mountains from the effeminate natives of the plains. Egypt is bounded on one side by the sea; on every other it is surrounded by immense plains or gentle eminences, which being beyond the reach of the fertilizing inundations of the Nile, have been, beyond all memory, converted into waste and barren sands by the excessive heat of the sun. I therefore made preparations for my journey, and hired a guide, who was to furnish me with beasts of burden, and accompany me across those dreary deserts. We accordingly began our march, mounted each upon a camel, which are found much more useful than horses in such a burning climate.

“Indeed,” said Tommy here to Mr. Barlow, “I am sorry to interrupt the story, but I shall be much obliged to you, Sir, if you will inform me what kind of an animal a camel is.”

“The camel,” answered Mr. Barlow, “is chiefly found in those burning climates which you have heard described. His height is very great, rising to fourteen or fifteen feet, reckoning to the top of his head. His legs are long and slender, his body not large, and his neck of an amazing length. This animal is found in no part of the world that we are acquainted with, wild or free, but the whole race is enslaved by man, and brought up to drudgery, from the first moment of their existence. As soon as he is born, they seize him, and force him to recline upon the ground, with

his legs doubled up under his belly. To keep him in this attitude they extend a piece of canvass over his body, and fix it to the ground by laying heavy weights upon the edge. In this manner he is tutored to obedience, and taught to kneel down at the orders of his master, and receive the burdens which he is destined to transport. In his temper he is gentle and tractable, and his patience in bearing thirst and hunger is superior to that of any animal we are acquainted with. He is driven across the burning deserts, loaded with the merchandise of those countries, and frequently does not find water to quench his thirst for several days. As to his food, it is nothing but the few herbs which are found in the least barren parts of the deserts, and prickly bushes, upon which he browses as a delicacy: sometimes he does not find even these for many days, yet pursues his journey with a degree of patience which is hardly credible."

"We mounted our camels," continued Chares, "and soon had reached the confines of the fertile plains of Egypt. The way, as we proceeded, grew sensibly more dreary and disagreeable, yet was sometimes varied with little tufts of trees and scanty patches of herbage. But these at length entirely disappeared, and nothing was seen on every side but an immense extent of barren sands, destitute of vegetation, and parched by the continual heat of the sun. No sound was heard to interrupt the dreary silence that reigned around, no traces of inhabitants perceivable, and the gloomy uniformity of the prospect inspired the soul with melancholy. In the mean time,

the sun seemed to shoot down perpendicular rays upon our heads, without a cloud to mitigate his violence. I felt a burning fever take possession of my body; my tongue was scorched with intolerable heat, and it was in vain I endeavoured to moisten my mouth with repeated draughts of water. At night we came to a little rising ground, at the foot of which we perceived some aquatic herbs, and a small quantity of muddy water, of which our camels took prodigious draughts. Here we spread our tents, and encamped for the night.

“With the morning we pursued our journey, but had not proceeded far before we saw a cloud of dust that seemed to rise along the desert; and, as we approached nearer, we easily distinguished the glitter of arms that reflected the rising sun. This was a band of the Arabians that had discovered us, and came to know our intentions. As they advanced, they spurred their horses, which are the most fleet and excellent in the world, and bounded along the desert with the lightness of an antelope; at the same time they brandished their lances, and seemed prepared alike for war or peace. But when they saw that we had neither the intention nor the power to commit hostilities, they stopped their coursers at the distance of a few paces from us; and he that appeared the chief, advanced, and, with a firm but mild tone of voice, enquired into the reason of our coming. It was then that I took the liberty of addressing him in his own language, to which I had for some time applied myself before my journey. I explained to him the curiosity which led

me to observe in person the manners of a people who are celebrated over the whole world, for having preserved their native simplicity unaltered, and their liberty unviolated, amid the revolutions which agitate all the neighbouring nations. I then offered to him the loading of my camel, which I had brought, not as being worthy his acceptance, but as a slight testimony of my regard; and concluded with remarking, that the fidelity of the Arabians in observing their engagements was unimpeached in a single instance; and therefore, relying upon the integrity of my own intentions, I had come a painful journey, unarmed, and almost alone, to put myself into their power, and demand the sacred rights of hospitality.

“While I was thus speaking, he looked at me with a penetration that seemed to read into my very soul; and when I had finished, he extended his arm with a smile of benevolence, and welcomed me to their tribe; telling me at the same time, that they admitted me as their guest, and received me with the arms of friendship: that their method of life, like their manners, was coarse and simple, but that I might consider myself as safer in their tents, and more removed from violence or treachery, than in the crowded cities which I had left. The rest of the squadron then approached, and all saluted me as a friend and brother. We then struck off across the desert, and after a few hours' march approached the encampment where they had left their wives and children.

“This people is the most singular, and in many respects the most admirable of all that inhabit this globe of earth. All other nations are subject to revo-

lutions and the various turns of fortune. Sometimes they wage successful wars; sometimes they improve in the arts of peace; now they are great and revered by their neighbours; and now, insulted and despised, they suffer all the miseries of servitude. The Arabians alone have never been known to vary in the smallest circumstance either of their internal policy or external situation. They inhabit a climate which would be intolerable to the rest of the human species for its burning heat, and a soil which refuses to furnish any of the necessaries of life. Hence, they neither plough the earth, nor sow, nor depend upon corn for their sustenance, nor are acquainted with any of the mechanic arts. They live chiefly upon the milk of their herds and flocks, and sometimes eat their flesh. These burning deserts are stretched out to an immense extent on every side, and these they consider as their common country, without having any fixed or permanent place of abode.

“Arid and barren as are these wilds in general, there are various spots which are more productive than the rest. Here are found supplies of water, and some appearances of vegetation; and here the Arabians encamp till they have exhausted the spontaneous products of the soil. Besides, they vary their place of residence with the different seasons of the year. When they are in perfect friendship with their neighbours, they advance to the very edges of the desert, and find more ample supplies of moisture and herbage. If they are attacked or molested, the whole tribe is in motion in an instant, and seeks a refuge in

their impenetrable recesses. Other nations are involved in various pursuits of war, or government, or commerce; they have made a thousand inventions of luxury necessary to their welfare; and the enjoyment of these they call happiness. The Arab is ignorant of all these things, or, if he knows them, despises their possession. All his wants, his passions, his desires, terminate in one object, and that object is the preservation of his liberty. For this purpose he contents himself with a bare sufficiency of the coarsest and simplest food; and the small quantity of clothing which he requires in such a climate, is fabricated by the women of the tribe, who milk the cattle and prepare the food of their husbands, and require no other pleasures than the pleasing interest of domestic cares.

“They have a breed of horses superior to any in the rest of the globe for gentleness, patience, and unrivalled swiftness. This is the particular passion and pride of the Arabian tribes. They are necessary to them in their warlike expeditions, and in their courses along the deserts. If they are attacked, they mount their steeds, who bear them with the rapidity of a tempest, to avenge their injuries; or should they be overmatched in fight, they soon transport them beyond the possibility of pursuit. For this reason the proudest monarchs and greatest conquerors have in vain endeavoured to subdue them. Troops accustomed to the plenty of a cultivated country are little able to pursue these winged warriors, over the wide extent of their sandy wastes. Oppressed with heat, fainting for want of water, and spent with the various

difficulties of the way, the most numerous armies have been destroyed in such attempts; and those that survived the obstacles of nature, were easily overcome by the repeated attacks of the valiant natives.

“ While I was in this country, I was myself witness to an embassy that was sent from a neighbouring prince, who imagined the fame of his exploits had struck the Arabians with terror, and disposed them to submission. The ambassador was introduced to the chief of the tribe, a venerable old man, undistinguished by any mark of ostentation from the rest, who received him sitting cross-legged at the door of his tent. He then began to speak, and, in a long and studied harangue, described the power of his master, the invincible courage of his armies, the vast profusion of arms, of warlike engines, and military stores; and concluded with a demand that the Arabians should submit to acknowledge him as their lord, and pay a yearly tribute.

“ At this proud speech, the younger part of the tribe began to frown with indignation, and clash their weapons in token of defiance; but the chief himself, with a calm and manly composure, made this reply: ‘ I expected, from the maturity of your age, and the gravity of your countenance, to have heard a rational discourse, befitting you to propose and us to hear. When you dwelt so long upon the power of your master, I also imagined that he had sent to us to promise a league of friendship and alliance, such as might become equals, and bind man more closely to his fellows. In this case the Arabians, although they neither want the assistance, nor fear the attacks of

any king or nation, would gladly have consented; because it has been always their favourite maxim, neither to leave injuries unpunished, nor to be outdone in kindness and hospitality. But since you have come thus far to deliver a message, which must needs be disagreeable to the ears of free-born men, who acknowledge no superior upon earth, you may thus report the sentiments of the Arabians to him that sent you.

“ You may tell him, that, as to the land which we inhabit, it is neither the gift of him nor any of his forefathers; we hold it from our ancestors, who received it in turn from theirs, by the common laws of nature, which has adapted particular countries and soils not only to man, but to all the various animals which she has produced. If, therefore, your king imagines that he has a right to retain the country which he and his people now inhabit, by the same tenure do the Arabians hold the sovereignty of these barren sands; where the bones of their ancestors have been buried, even from the first creation of the world. But you have described to us in pompous language, the extraordinary power and riches of your king: according to you, he not only commands numerous and well-appointed troops of warlike men, furnished with every species of military stores; but he also possesses immense heaps of gold, silver, and other precious commodities, and his country affords him an inexhaustible supply of corn, and oil, and wine, and all the other conveniences of life. If, therefore, this representation be false, you must appear a vain and despicable babbler, who, being induced by no sufficient

reason, have come hither of your own accord to amuse us, a plain and simple race of men, with specious tales and fables; but, if your words be true, your king must be equally unjust and foolish, who, already possessing all these advantages, doth still insatiably grasp after more; and enjoying so many good things with ease and security to himself, will rather put them all to the hazard, than repress the vain desires of his own intolerable avarice. As to the tribute which you have demanded, what you have already seen of the Arabians and their country may afford you a sufficient answer. You see that we have neither cities, nor fields, nor rivers, nor wine, nor oil; gold and silver are equally unknown among us; and the Arabians, abandoning all these things to other men, have, at the same time, delivered themselves from the necessity of being slaves, which is the general law by which all other mortals retain their possessions. We have, therefore, nothing which we can send as a tribute but the sands of these our deserts, and the arrows and lances with which we have hitherto defended them from all invaders. If these are treasures worthy of his acceptance, he may lead his conquering troops to take possession of our country. But he will find men who are not softened by luxury, or vanquished by their own vices; men, who prize their liberty at a dearer rate than all other mortals do their riches or their lives; and to whom dishonour is more formidable than wounds and death. If he can vanquish such men, it will, however, become his prudence to reflect, whether he can vanquish the obstacles which nature herself has opposed to his ambition. In attempting to pass our deserts, he

will have to struggle with famine and consuming thirst, from which no enemy has hitherto escaped, even when he has failed to perish by the arrows of the Arabians.'

"Happy and generous people," exclaimed Sophron, "how well do they deserve the liberty they enjoy! With such sentiments, they need not fear the attack of kings or conquerors. It is the vices of men, and not the weakness of their nature, that basely enslave them to their equals; and he that prizes liberty beyond a few contemptible pleasures of his senses, may be certain that no human force can ever bereave him of so great a good."

"Such sentiments," replied Chares, "convince me that I have not made a false estimate of the inhabitants of these mountainous districts. It is for this reason that I have been so particular in the description of Egypt and Arabia. I wished to know whether the general spirit of indolence and pusillanimity had infected the hardy inhabitants of Lebanon: but from the generous enthusiasm which animates your countenance at the recital of noble actions, as well as from what I have experienced you are capable of attempting, I trust that these solitary scenes are uninfected with the vices that have deluged the rest of Asia, and bent its inhabitants to the yoke."

Here the impatience of Tommy, which had been increasing a considerable time, could no longer be restrained, and he could not help interrupting the story, by addressing Mr. Barlow thus:

TOMMY.

Sir, will you give me leave to ask you a question?

MR. BARLOW.

As many as you choose.

TOMMY.

In all these stories which I have heard, it seems as if those nations that have little or nothing, are more good-natured, and better, and braver, than those that have a great deal.

MR. BARLOW.

This is indeed sometimes the case.

TOMMY.

But then, why should it not be the case here, as well as in other places? Are all the poor in this country better than the rich?

"It should seem," answered Mr. Barlow, smiling, "as if you were of that opinion."

TOMMY.

Why so, Sir?

MR. BARLOW.

Because, whatever you want to have done, I observe, that you always address yourself to the poor, and not to the rich.

TOMMY.

Yes, Sir, but that is a different case. The poor are used to do many things which the rich never do.

MR. BARLOW.

Are those things useful, or not useful?

TOMMY.

Why, to be sure, many of them are extremely useful; for, since I have acquired so much knowledge, I find they cultivate the ground to raise corn, and build houses, and hammer iron, which is so necessary

to make every thing we use; besides feeding cattle, and dressing our victuals, and washing our clothes, and in short, doing every thing which is necessary to be done.

MR. BARLOW.

What! do the poor do all these things?

TOMMY.

Yes, indeed, or else they would never be done. For it would be a very ungenteel thing to labour at a forge like a blacksmith, or hold the plough like a farmer, or build a house like a bricklayer.

MR. BARLOW.

And did not you build a house in my garden, some little time ago?

TOMMY.

Yes, Sir; but that was only for my amusement. It was not intended for any body to live in.

MR. BARLOW.

So you still think it the first qualification of a gentleman never to do any thing useful; and he that does any thing with that design, ceases to be a gentleman?

Tommy looked a little ashamed at this, but he said it was not so much his own opinion, as that of the other young gentlemen and ladies with whom he had conversed.

“But,” replied Mr. Barlow, “you asked just now which were the best, the rich or the poor; but if the poor provide food, and clothing, and houses, and every thing else, not only for themselves but for all the rich, while the rich do nothing at all, it must appear that the poor are better than the rich.”

TOMMY.

Yes, Sir; but then the poor do not act in that manner out of kindness, but because they are obliged to it.

MR. BARLOW.

That, indeed, is a better argument than you sometimes use. But tell me which set of people would you prefer, those that are always doing useful things because they are obliged to it, or those who never do any thing useful at all?

TOMMY.

Indeed, Sir, I hardly know what to say; but when I asked the question, I did not so much mean the doing useful things.—But now I think on it, the rich do a great deal of good by buying the things of the poor, and giving them money in return.

MR. BARLOW.

What is money?

TOMMY.

Money, Sir, money is—I believe little pieces of silver and gold, with a head upon them.

MR. BARLOW.

And what is the use of these little pieces of silver and gold?

TOMMY.

Indeed I do not know that they are of any use; but every body has agreed to take them, and therefore you may buy with them whatever you want.

MR. BARLOW.

Then, according to your last account, the goodness of the rich consists in taking from the poor houses, clothes, and food, and giving them in return little

bits of silver, and gold, which are really good for nothing?

TOMMY.

Yes, Sir; but then the poor can take these pieces of money and purchase every thing which they want.

MR. BARLOW.

You mean, that if a poor man has money in his pocket, he can always exchange it for clothes, or food, or any other necessary.

TOMMY.

Indeed I do, Sir.

MR. BARLOW.

But who must he buy them of?—For, according to your account, the rich never produce any of these things: therefore, the poor, if they want to purchase them, can only do it of each other.

TOMMY.

But, Sir, I cannot think that is always the case; for, I have been along with my mamama to shops, where there were fine powdered gentlemen and ladies who sold things to other people, and livery servants, and young ladies who played upon the harpsichord like Miss Matilda.

MR. BARLOW.

But, my good little friend, do you imagine that these fine powdered gentlemen and ladies made the things which they sold?

TOMMY.

That, Sir, I cannot tell, but I should rather imagine not; for all the fine people I have ever seen, are too much afraid of spoiling their clothes to work.

MR. BARLOW.

All that they do, then, is to employ poorer persons to work for them, while they only sell what is produced by their labour. So that still you see we reach no further than this; the rich do nothing and produce nothing, and the poor every thing that is really useful. Were there a whole nation of rich people, they would all be starved like the Spaniard in the story, because no one would condescend to produce any thing: and this would happen in spite of all their money, unless they had neighbours who were poorer to supply them. But a nation which was poor might be industrious, and gradually supply themselves with all they wanted; and then it would be of little consequence whether they had pieces of metal with heads upon them or not.—But this conversation has lasted long enough at present, and, as you are now going to bed, I dare say Miss Simmons will be so good as to defer the remainder of her story until to-morrow.

The next day Tommy rose before his father and mother, and, as his imagination had been forcibly acted on by the description he had heard of the Arabian horsemen, he desired his little horse might be saddled, and that William, his father's man, would attend him upon a ride. Unfortunately for Tommy, his vivacity was greater than his reason, and his taste for imitation was continually leading him into some mischief or misfortune. He had no sooner been introduced into the acquaintance of genteel life, than he threw aside all his former habits, and burnt to distinguish himself as a most accomplished young gen-

tleman. He was now, in turn, sickened and disgusted with fashionable affectation; and his mind, at leisure for fresh impressions, was ready to catch at the first new object which occurred. The idea, therefore, which presented itself to his mind, as soon as he opened his eyes, was that of being an Arabian horseman. Nothing, he imagined, could equal the pleasure of guiding a fiery steed over those immense and desolate wastes which he had heard described. In the mean time, as the country where he wished to exhibit was rather at too great a distance, he thought he might excite some applause even upon the common before his father's house.

Full of this idea, he rose, put on his boots, and summoned William to attend him. William had been too much accustomed to humour all his caprices, to make any difficulty of obeying him; and, as he had often ridden out with his young master before, he did not foresee the least possible inconvenience. But the maternal care of Mrs. Merton had made it an indispensable condition with her son, that he should never presume to ride with spurs, and she had strictly enjoined all the servants never to supply him with those dangerous implements. Tommy had long murmured in secret at this prohibition, which seemed to imply a distrust of his abilities in horsemanship, which sensibly wounded his pride. But, since he had taken it into his head to emulate the Arabs themselves, and perhaps excel them in their own art, he considered it as no longer possible to endure the disgrace. But, as he was no stranger to the strict injunction which had been given to all the servants, he did not dare

to make the experiment of soliciting their assistance. While he was in this embarrassment, a new and sudden expedient presented itself to his fertile genius, which he instantly resolved to adopt. Tommy went to his mamma's maid, and, without difficulty, obtained from her a couple of the biggest pins, which he thrust through the leather of his boots, and, thus accoutred, he mounted his horse without suspicion or observation. Tommy had not ridden far before he began to give vent to his reigning passion, and asked William if he had ever seen an Arabian on horseback. The answer of William sufficiently proved his ignorance, which Tommy kindly undertook to remove by giving him a detail of all the particulars he had heard the preceding night; but, unfortunately, the eloquence of Tommy precipitated him into a dangerous experiment; for, just as he was describing their rapid flight across the deserts, the interest of his subject so transported him, that he closed his legs upon his little horse, and pricked him in so sensible a manner, that the poney, who was not deficient in spirit, resented the attack, and set off with him at a prodigious rate. William, when he saw his master thus burst forth, was at a loss whether to consider it as an accident, or only an oratorical grace; but seeing the horse hurrying along the roughest part of the common, while Tommy tugged in vain to restrain his efforts, he thought it necessary to endeavour to overtake him, and therefore pursued him with all the speed he could use. But the poney, whose blood seemed to be only the more inflamed by the violence of his own exertions, ran the faster when he

heard the trampling of another horse behind him. In this manner did Tommy scamper over the common, while William pursued in vain; for, just as the servant thought he had reached his master, his horse would push forward with such rapidity as left his pursuer far behind. Tommy kept his seat with infinite address; but he now began seriously to repent of his own ungovernable ambition, and would, with the greatest pleasure, have exchanged his own spirited steed for the dullest ass in England. The race had now endured a considerable time, and seemed to be no nearer to a conclusion, when, on a sudden, the poney turned short, upon an attempt of his master to stop him, and rushed precipitately into a large bog, or quagmire, which was full before him; here he made a momentary halt, and Tommy wisely embraced the opportunity of letting himself slide off upon a soft and yielding bed of mire. The servant now came up to Tommy, and rescued him from his disagreeable situation, where, however, he had received no other damage than that of daubing himself all over. William had been at first very much frightened at the danger of his master; but when he saw that he had so luckily escaped all hurt, he could not help asking him, with a smile, whether this too was a stroke of Arabian horsemanship. Tommy was a little provoked at this reflection upon his horsemanship; but, as he had now lost something of his irritability by repeated mortification, he wisely repressed his passion, and desired William to catch his horse, while he returned homewards on foot to warm himself. The servant, therefore, endeavoured to approach the poney,

who, as if contented with the triumph he had obtained over his rider, was quietly feeding at a little distance; but, the instant William approached, he set off again at a violent rate, and seemed disposed to lead him a second chase, not inferior to the first.

In the mean time, Tommy walked pensively along the common, reflecting upon the various accidents which had befallen him, and the repeated disappointments he had found in all his attempts to distinguish himself. While he was thus engaged, he overtook a poor and ragged figure, the singularity of whose appearance engaged his attention. It was a man of middle age, in a dress he had never seen before, with two poor children, who seemed with difficulty to keep up with him, while he carried a third in his arms, whose pale, emaciated looks, sufficiently declared disease and pain. The man had upon his head a coarse blue bonnet instead of a hat; he was wrapped round by a tattered kind of garment, striped with various colours, and at his side hung down a long and formidable sword. Tommy surveyed him with such an earnest observation, that at length the man took notice of it, and, bowing to him with the greatest civility, ventured to ask him if he had met with any accident, as he appeared in a disorder which suited little with his quality. Tommy was not a little pleased with the discernment of the man, who could distinguish his importance in spite of the dirtiness of his clothes, and therefore mildly answered; "No, friend, there is not much the matter. I have a little obstinate horse that ran away with me, and, after trying in vain to throw me down, he plunged into the

middle of that great bog there, and so I jumped off, for fear of being swallowed up, otherwise I should soon have made him submit; for I am used to such things, and don't mind them in the least."

Here the child that the man was carrying began to cry bitterly, and the father endeavoured to pacify him, but in vain. "Poor thing," said Tommy, "he seems not to be well—I am heartily sorry for him!" "Alas! master," answered the man, "he is not well, indeed; he has now a violent ague fit upon him, and I have not had a morsel of bread to give him, or any of the rest, since yesterday noon." Tommy was naturally generous, and now his mind was unusually softened by the remembrance of his own recent distresses; he therefore pulled a shilling out of his pocket, and gave it the man, saying, "Here, my honest friend, here is something to buy your child some food, and I sincerely wish he may soon recover." "God bless your sweet face!" said the man; "you are the best friend I have seen this many a day; but for this kind assistance we might have been all lost. He then, with many bows and thanks, struck across the common into a different path; and Tommy went forward, feeling a greater pleasure at this little act of humanity, than he had long been acquainted with among all the fine acquaintance he had lately contracted. But he had walked a very little way with these reflections, before he met with a new adventure; a flock of sheep was running, with all the precipitation which fear could inspire, from the pursuit of a large dog; and just as Tommy approached, the dog had overtaken a lamb, and seemed disposed

to devour it. Tommy was naturally an enemy to all cruelty, and therefore running towards the dog, with more alacrity than prudence, he endeavoured to drive him from his prey. But the animal, who probably despised the diminutive size of his adversary, after growling a little while and showing his teeth, when he found that this was not sufficient to deter him from intermeddling, entirely quitted the sheep; and, making a sudden spring, seized upon the skirt of Tommy's coat, which he shook with every expression of rage. Tommy behaved with more intrepidity than could have been expected; for he neither cried out nor attempted to run, but made his utmost efforts to disengage himself from his enemy. But as the contest was so unequal, it is probable he would have been severely bitten, had not the honest stranger, whom he had relieved, come running up to his assistance, and seeing the danger of his benefactor, laid the dog dead at his feet by a furious stroke of his broadsword. Tommy, thus delivered from the impending danger, expressed his gratitude to the stranger in the most affectionate manner, and desired him to accompany him to his father's house, where he and his wearied children should receive whatever refreshment they wished. He then turned his eyes to the lamb which had been the cause of the contest, and lay panting upon the ground, bleeding and wounded, but not to death, and remarked with astonishment upon his fleece, the well-known characters of H. S. accompanied with a cross! "As I live," said Tommy, "I believe this is the very lamb which Harry used to be so fond of, and which used sometimes to follow him

to Mr. Barlow's. I am the luckiest fellow in the world, to have come in time to deliver him; and now, perhaps, Harry may forgive me all the ill usage he has met with." Saying this he took the lamb up, and kissed it with the greatest tenderness; nay, he would have even borne it home in his arms, had it not been rather too heavy for his strength; but the honest stranger, with a grateful officiousness, offered his services, and prevailed on Tommy to let him carry it, while he delivered his child to the biggest of its brothers.

When Tommy was now arrived within a little distance of his home, he met his father and Mr. Barlow, who had left the house to enjoy the morning air before breakfast. They were surprised to see him in such an equipage; for the dirt, which had bespattered him from head to foot, began to dry in various places, and gave him the appearance of a farmer's clay-built wall in the act of hardening. But Tommy, without giving them time to make enquiries, ran affectionately up to Mr. Barlow, and taking him by the hand, said, "Oh, Sir! here is the luckiest accident in the world—poor Harry Sandford's favourite lamb would have been killed by a great mischievous dog, if I had not happened to come by and save his life." "And who is this honest man," said Mr. Merton, "whom you have picked up on the common? He seems to be in distress, and his famished children are scarcely able to drag themselves along."

"Poor man!" answered Tommy, "I am very much obliged to him; for when I went to save Harry's lamb, the dog attacked me, and would have

hurt me very much, if he had not come to my assistance, and killed him with his great sword. So I have brought him with me, that he might refresh himself with his poor children, one of whom has a terrible ague. For I knew, papa, though I have not behaved well of late, you would not be against my doing an act of charity."

"I am, on the contrary, very glad," said Mr. Merton, "to see you have so much gratitude in your temper. But what is the reason that I see you thus disfigured with dirt? Surely you must have been riding, and your horse has thrown you?" And so it is, for here is William following, with both the horses in a foam."

William at that moment appeared, and, trotting up to his master, began to make excuses for his own share in the business.

"Indeed, Sir," said he, "I did not think there was the least harm in going out with Master Tommy; and we were riding along as quietly as possible, and master was giving me a long account of the Arabs; who, he said, lived in the finest country in the world, which does not produce any thing to eat, or drink, or wear; and yet they never want to come upon the parish; but ride the most mettled horses in the world, fit to start for any plate in England. And just as he was giving me this account, Punch took it into his head to run away, and while I was endeavouring to catch him, he jumped into a quagmire, and shot Master Tommy off in the middle of it."

"No," said Tommy, "there you mistake; I be-

lieve I could manage a much more spirited horse than Punch; but I thought it prudent to throw myself off, for fear of his plunging deeper in the mire."

"But how is this?" said Mr. Merton; "the poney used to be the quietest of horses; what can have given him this sudden impulse to run away? Surely, William, you were not so imprudent as to trust your master with spurs?"

"No, Sir," answered William, "not I; and I can take my oath he had no spurs on when we set out." Mr. Merton was convinced there was some mystery in this transaction, and looking at his son to find it out, he at length discovered the ingenious contrivance of Tommy to supply the place of spurs, and could hardly preserve his gravity at the sight. He however mildly set before him his imprudence, which might have been attended with the most fatal consequences; the fracture of his limbs, or even the loss of his life, and desired him for the future to be more cautious. They then returned to the house, and Mr. Merton ordered the servants to supply his guests with plenty of the most nourishing food. After breakfast, they sent for the unhappy stranger into the parlour, whose countenance now bespoke his satisfaction and gratitude; and Mr. Merton, who, by his dress and accent, discovered him to be an inhabitant of Scotland, desired to know by what accident he had thus wandered so far from home with these poor helpless children, and had been reduced to so much misery."

"Alas! your honour," answered the man, "I should ill deserve the favours you have shown me,

if I attempted to conceal any thing from such worthy benefactors. My tale, however, is simple and uninteresting, and I fear there can be nothing in the story of my distress the least deserving of your attention."

"Surely," said Mr. Merton, with the most benevolent courtesy, "there must be something in the distress of every honest man which ought to interest his fellow-creatures: and if you will acquaint us with all the circumstances of your situation, it may perhaps be within our power, as it certainly is in our inclinations, to do you further service."

The man then bowed to the company with an air of dignity which surprised them all, and thus began:—"I was born in that part of our island which is called the North of Scotland. The country there, partly from the barrenness of the soil and the inclemency of the seasons, and partly from other causes which I will not now enumerate, is unfavourable to the existence of its inhabitants. More than half the year our mountains are covered with continual snows, which prohibit the use of agriculture, or blast the expectations of an harvest. Yet the race of men which inhabit these dreary wilds, are perhaps not more undeserving the smiles of fortune than many of their happier neighbours. Accustomed to a life of toil and hardship, their bodies are braced by the incessant difficulties they have to encounter, and their minds remain untainted by the example of their more luxurious neighbours. They are bred up from infancy with a deference and respect for their parents, and with a mutual spirit of endearment towards their equals, which I have not remarked in happier cli-

mates. These circumstances expand and elevate the mind, and attach the Highlanders to their native mountains with a warmth of affection, which is scarcely known in the midst of polished cities and cultivated countries. Every man there is more or less acquainted with the history of his clan, and the martial exploits which they have performed. In the winter season we sit around the blazing light of our fires, and commemorate the glorious actions of our ancestors; the children catch the sound, and consider themselves as interested in supporting the honour of a nation, which is yet unsullied in the annals of the world, and resolve to transmit it equally pure to their posterity. With these impressions, which were the earliest I can remember, you cannot wonder, gentlemen, that I should early imbibe a spirit of enterprise and a love of arms. My father was, indeed, poor, but he had been himself a soldier, and therefore did not so strenuously oppose my growing inclinations. He indeed set before me the little chance I should have of promotion, and the innumerable difficulties of my intended profession. But what were difficulties to a youth brought up to subsist upon a handful of meal, to drink the waters of the stream, and to sleep, shrouded in my plaid, beneath the arch of an impending rock! I see, gentlemen, (continued the Highlander,) that you appear surprised to hear a man, who has so little to recommend him, express himself in rather loftier language than you are accustomed to among your peasantry here. But you should remember that a certain degree of education is more general in Scotland than

where you live; and that, wanting almost all the gifts of fortune, we cannot afford to suffer those of nature to remain uncultivated. When, therefore, my father saw that the determined bent of my temper was towards a military life, he thought it vain to oppose my inclinations. He even, perhaps, involuntarily cherished them, by explaining to me, during the long leisure of our dreary winter, some books which treated of military sciences and ancient history. From these I imbibed an early love of truth and honour, which I hope has not abandoned me since; and, by teaching me what brave and virtuous men have suffered in every age and country, they have, perhaps, prevented me from entirely sinking under my misfortunes.

“One night, in the autumn of the year, as we were seated round the embers of our fire, we heard a knocking at the door. My father rose, and a man of a majestic presence came in, and requested permission to pass the night in our cottage. He told us he was an English officer who had long been stationed in the Highlands; but now, upon the breaking out of war, he had been sent for in haste to London, whence he was to embark for America as soon as he could be joined by his regiment. This, (said he,) has been the reason of my travelling later than prudence permits, in a mountainous country with which I am imperfectly acquainted. I have unfortunately lost my way, and, but for your kindness, (added he,) smiling, I must here begin my campaign, and pass the night upon a bed of heath amid the mountains. My father rose, and received the officer with all the courtesy he

was able; for, in Scotland, every man thinks himself honoured by being permitted to exercise his hospitality; he told them his accommodations were mean and poor, but what he had was heartily at his service. He then sent me to look after his visitor's horse, and set before him some milk and oaten bread, which were all the dainties we possessed: our guest, however, seemed to feed upon it with an appetite as keen as if he had been educated in the Highlands; and, what I could not help remarking with astonishment, although his air and manners proved that he could be no stranger to a more delicate way of living, not a single word fell from him that intimated he had ever been used to better fare. During the evening he entertained us with various accounts of the dangers he had already escaped, and the service he had seen. He particularly described the manners of the savage tribes he was going to encounter in America, and the nature of their warfare. All this, accompanied with the tone and look of a man who was familiar with great events, and had borne a considerable share in all he related, so inflamed my military ardour, that I was no longer capable of repressing it. The stranger perceived it, and, looking at me with an air of tenderness and compassion, asked if that young man was intended for the service. My colour rose, and my heart immediately swelled at the question: the look and manner of our guest had strangely interested me in his favour, and the natural grace and simplicity with which he related his own exploits, put me in mind of the great men of other times. Could I but march under the banners of such

a leader, I thought nothing would be too arduous to be achieved. I saw a long perspective before me, of combats, difficulties, and dangers; something, however, whispered to my mind that I should be successful in the end, and support the reputation of our name and clan. Full of these ideas, I sprang forwards at the question, and told the officer that the darling passion of my life would be to bear arms under a chief like him; and that, if he would suffer me to enlist under his command, I should be ready to justify his kindness, by patiently supporting every hardship, and facing every danger. Young man, (replied he, with a look of kind concern,) there is not an officer in the army that would not be proud of such a recruit; but I should ill repay the hospitality I have received from your parents, if I suffered you to be deceived in your opinion of the military profession. He then set before me, in the strongest language, all the hardships which would be my lot; the dangers of the field, the pestilence of camps, the slow consuming languor of hospitals, the insolence of command, the mortification of subordination, and the uncertainty that the exertions of even a long life would ever lead to the least promotion. All this, (replied I, trembling with fear that my father should take advantage of these too just representations to refuse his consent,) I knew before; but I feel an irresistible impulse within me, which compels me to the field. The die is cast for life or death, and I will abide by the chance that now occurs. If you, Sir, refuse me, I will however enlist with the first officer that will

accept me; for I will no longer wear out life amid the solitude of these surrounding mountains, without even a chance of meriting applause, or distinguishing my name.

“The officer then desisted from his opposition, and, turning to my parents, asked them if it were with their consent that I was going to enlist. My mother burst into tears, and my sisters hung about me weeping; my father replied, with a deep sigh, ‘I have long experienced that it is vain to oppose the decrees of Providence. Could my persuasions have availed, he would have remained contented in these mountains; but that is now impossible, at least till he has purchased wisdom at the price of his blood. If, therefore, Sir, you do not despise his youth and mien, take him with you, and let him have the advantage of your example. I have been a soldier myself, and I can assure you, with truth, that I have never seen an officer under whom I would more gladly march than yourself.’ Our guest made a polite reply to my father, and instantly agreed to receive me. He then pulled out a purse, and offering it to my father, said, ‘The common price of a recruit is now five guineas, but, so well am I satisfied with the appearance of your son, and the confidence you repose in me, that I must insist upon your accepting what is contained in this purse; you will dispose of it as you please, for your mutual advantage. Before I depart to-morrow, I will give him such directions as may enable him to join the regiment, which is now preparing to march.’ He then requested that he might retire to rest, and my father would have re-

signed the only bed he had in the house to his guest; but he absolutely refused, and said, 'Would you shame me in the eyes of my new recruit? What is a soldier good for that cannot sleep without a bed? The time will soon arrive when I shall think a comfortable roof and a little straw, an enviable luxury.' I therefore raised him as convenient a couch as I was able to make with heath and straw; and, wrapping himself up in his riding-coat, he threw himself down upon it, and slept till morning. With the first dawn of day he rose and departed, having first given me the directions which were necessary to enable me to join the regiment: but, before he went, my father, who was equally charmed with his generosity and manners, pressed him to take back part of the money he had given us; this, however, he absolutely refused, and left us, full of esteem and admiration.

"I will not, gentlemen, repeat the affecting scene I had to undergo in taking leave of my family and friends. It pierced me to the very heart; and then, for the first time, I almost repented at being so near the accomplishment of my wishes. I was, however, engaged, and determined to fulfil my engagement; I therefore tore myself from my family, having with difficulty prevailed upon my father to accept of part of the money I had received for my enrolment. I will not trespass upon your time, to describe the various emotions which I felt at the crowd of new sensations which entered my mind along our march. I arrived without any accident at London, the splendid capital of this kingdom; but I could not there restrain my astonishment, to see an immense people talking of

wounds, of death, of battles, sieges, and conquests, in the midst of feasts, and balls, and puppet-shows; and calmly devoting thousands of their fellow-creatures to perish by famine or the sword, while they considered the loss of a dinner, or the endurance of a shower, as an exertion too great for human fortitude.

“I soon embarked, and arrived, without any other accident than a horrible sickness, at the place of our destination in America. Here I joined my gallant officer, Colonel Simmons, who had performed the voyage in another ship.”—Miss Simmons, who was present at this narration, seemed to be much interested at this mention of her own name; she, however, did not express her feelings, and the stranger proceeded with his story.—“This gentleman was, with justice, the most beloved and the most deserving to be so, of any officer I have ever known. Inflexible in every thing that concerned the honour of the service, he never pardoned wilful misbehaviour, because he knew that it was incompatible with military discipline; yet, when obliged to punish, he did it with such reluctance, that he seemed to suffer almost as much as the criminal. But, if his reason imposed this just and necessary severity, his heart had taught him another lesson in respect to the private distresses of his men. He visited them in their sickness, relieved their miseries, and was a niggard of nothing but human blood. But I ought to correct myself in that expression, for he was rashly lavish of his own, and to that we owe his untimely loss.

“I had not been long in America, before the colonel, who was perfectly acquainted with the lan-

guage and manners of the savage tribes that border upon the British colonies, was sent upon an embassy to one of their nations, for the purpose of soliciting their alliance with Britain. It may, perhaps, be not uninteresting to you, gentlemen, and to this my honourable little master, to hear some account of a people whose manners and customs are so much the reverse of what you see at home. As my worthy officer, therefore, contented with my assiduity and improvement in military knowledge, permitted me to have the honour of attending him, I will describe some of the most curious facts which I was witness to.

“ You have, doubtless, heard many accounts of the surprising increase of the English colonies in America; and, when we reflect that it is scarcely a hundred years since some of them were established, it must be confessed that they have made rapid improvements in clearing the ground of woods, and bringing it to cultivation. Yet, much as they have already done, the country is yet an immense forest, except immediately upon the coast. These forests extend on every side, to a distance that no human sagacity or observation has been able to determine. They abound in every species of tree which you see in England, to which may be added a great variety more which are unknown with us. Under their shade is generally found a rich, luxurious herbage, which serves for pasture to a thousand herds of animals. Here are seen elks, a kind of deer of the largest size, and buffaloes, a species of wild ox, by thousands, and even horses, which, having been originally brought

over by the Spaniards, have escaped from their settlements and multiplied in the woods."

"Dear," said Tommy, "that must be a fine country indeed, where horses run wild; why, a man might have one for nothing." "And yet," said Mr. Merton, "it would be of little use to a person to have a wild horse, who is not able to manage a tame one."

Tommy made no answer to his father, and the man proceeded:—"But the greatest curiosity of all this country is, in my opinion, the various tribes or nations which inhabit it. Bred up from their infancy to a life of equal hardiness with the wild animals, they are almost as robust in their constitutions. These various tribes inhabit little villages, which generally are seated upon the banks of rivers; and, though they cultivate small portions of land around their towns, they seek the greater part of their subsistence from the chase. In their persons they are rather tall and slender, but admirably well-proportioned and active, and their colour is a pale red, exactly resembling copper. Thus accustomed to roam about the woods and brave the inclemencies of the weather, as well as continually exposed to the attacks of their enemies, they acquire a degree of courage and fortitude which can scarcely be conceived. It is nothing to them to pass whole days without a morsel of food, to lie whole nights upon the bare damp ground, and to swim the widest rivers in the depth of winter. Money, indeed, and the greater part of what we call the conveniences of life, they are unacquainted with; nor can they conceive that one man should serve another, merely because he has a few pieces of

shining metal; they imagine, that the only just distinctions arise from superior courage and bodily perfections, and therefore these alone are able to engage their esteem. I shall never forget the contempt which one of their chiefs expressed, at seeing an officer who was rather corpulent at the head of his men: 'What fools,' said he, 'are these Europeans, to be commanded by a man who is so unwieldy that he can neither annoy his enemies nor defend his friends, and who is only fit to be a scullion!' When they are at peace, they exercise the virtue of hospitality, to a degree that might shame more polished nations: if a stranger arrives at any of their towns, he enters into the first habitation he pleases, and is sure to be entertained with all the family possess. In this manner he might journey from one end of the continent to the other, and never fail a friendly reception.

"But, if their manners are gentle in peace, they are more dreadful when provoked than all the wildest animals of the forest. Bred up from infancy to suffer no restraint, and to give an unbounded loose to all their passions, they know not what it is to forgive an injury. They love their tribe with a degree of affection that is totally unknown in every other country; for that they are ready to suffer every hardship and danger; wounds, and pain, and death, they despise, as often as the interest of their country is concerned; but the same attachment renders them implacable and unforgiving to all their enemies: in short, they seem to have all the virtues and the vices of the ancient Spartans.

“To one of these tribes, called the Ottigamies, was colonel Simmons sent ambassador, accompanied by a few more officers, and some private men, among whom I had the honour to be included. We pursued our march, for several days, through forests which seemed to be of equal duration with the world itself. Sometimes we were shrouded in such obscurity, from the thickness of the covert, that we could scarcely see the light of heaven; sometimes we emerged into spacious meadows, bare of trees, and covered with the most luxuriant herbage, on which were feeding immense herds of buffaloes: these, as soon as they snuffed the approach of men, (which they are capable of doing even at a considerable distance,) ran with precipitation into the surrounding woods. Many, however, fell beneath our attack, and served us for food during our journey. At length we came to a wide and rapid river, upon whose banks we found a party of friendly savages, with some of whom we embarked, upon canoes made of the bark of trees, to proceed to the country of the Ottigamies.

“After three days’ incessant rowing, we entered a spacious lake, upon whose banks were encamped a considerable part of the nation we sought. As we approached the shore, they saluted us with a volley of balls from their muskets, which whistled just above our heads, without producing mischief. I and several of the soldiers instantly seized our arms, imagining it to be an hostile attack; but our leader quieted our apprehensions, by informing us, that this was only a friendly salute, with which a nation of warriors received and welcomed their allies. We landed, and

were instantly conducted to the assembly of the chiefs, who were sitting upon the ground, without external pomp or ceremony, with their arms beside them; but there was in their countenances and eyes an expression of ferocious grandeur which would have daunted the boldest European. Yes, gentlemen, I have seen the greatest and most powerful men in my own country; I have seen them adorned with every external circumstance of dress, and pomp, and equipage, to inspire respect; but never did I see any thing which so completely awed the soul, as the angry scowl and fiery glance of a savage American.

“As soon as our leader entered the circle, he produced the calumet, or pipe of peace. This is the universal mark of friendship and alliance among all the barbarous nations of America, and he that bears it, is considered with so much respect, that his person is always safe. This calumet is nothing but a long and slender pipe, ornamented with the most lively and beautiful feathers, which are ingeniously fixed along the tube; the bowl is composed of a peculiar kind of reddish marble, and filled with scented herbs and tobacco. Colonel Simmons lighted his pipe with great solemnity, and turning the bowl first towards the heavens, then to the earth, then in a circle round him, he began to smoke. In the mean time the whole assembly sat with mute attention, waiting to hear his proposals: for though we call them savages, yet, in some respects, they well deserve to be imitated by more refined nations. In all their meetings and assemblies the greatest order and regularity prevail; whoever rises to speak, is sure of being patiently heard to the

end, without the least interruption. Our leader then began to harangue them in their own language, with which he was well acquainted. I did not understand what passed, but it was afterwards explained to me, that he set before their eyes the injuries they had mutually received from the French and the tribes in their alliance. He told them that their great father, for so these people call the king of Britain, had taken up the hatchet of war, and was sending an innumerable band of warriors to punish the insults of his enemies. He told them that he had ordered him to visit the Ottigamies, his dutiful children, and smoke with them the pipe of peace. He invited their young men to join the warriors that came from beyond the ocean, and who were marching to bury the bones of their brethren, who had been killed by their mutual foes. When he had concluded, he flung upon the ground a curious string of shells, which is called the belt of wampum. This is a necessary circumstance in all the treaties made with these tribes. Whoever comes as an ambassador, brings one with him to present to the people whose friendship is solicited, and, if the belt is accepted, the proposed alliance is considered as entered into. As soon as our leader had finished, a chief of a stature superior to the common race of men, and a most determined look, jumped into the middle of the assembly, and, taking up the belt, cried out in their language: 'Let us march, my brethren, with the young men of our great father. Let us dig up the hatchet of war, and revenge the bones of our countrymen; they lie unburied, and cry to us for vengeance: we will not be deaf to their

cries; we will shake off all delays; we will approve ourselves worthy of our ancestors; we will drink the blood of our enemies, and spread a feast of carnage for the fowls of the air and the wild beasts of the forest. This resolution was universally approved by the whole nation, who consented to the war with a ferocious joy. The assembly was then dissolved, and the chiefs prepared for their intended march, according to the manners of their country.

“All the savage tribes that inhabit America are accustomed to very little clothing. Inured to the inclemencies of the weather, and being in the constant exercise of all their limbs, they cannot bear the restraint and confinement of a European dress. The greater part of their bodies, therefore, is naked, and this they paint in various fashions, to give additional terror to their looks. When the chiefs were thus prepared they came from their tents, and the last solemnity I was witness to was dancing the dance of war, and singing the song of death. But what words can convey an adequate idea of the furious movements and expressions which animated them through the whole of this performance! Every man was armed with a kind of hatchet, which is their usual weapon in battle, and called a tomahawk. This he held in his hand, and brandished through the whole of the dreadful spectacle. As they went on, their faces kindled into an expression of anger which would have daunted the boldest spectator. Their gestures seemed to be inspired by frantic rage and implacable animosity. They moved their bodies with the most violent

agitations, and it was easy to see they represented all the circumstances of a real combat. They seemed to be engaged in close or distant battle, and brandished their weapons with so much fury, that you would have imagined they were going every instant to hew each other to pieces; nor would it have been possible, even for the performers themselves of this terrific dance, to have avoided mutual wounds and slaughter, had they not been endued with that extraordinary activity which is peculiar to savage nations. By intervals they increased the horrid solemnity of the exhibition, by uttering yells that would have pierced a European-ear with horror. I have seen rage and fury under various forms, and in different parts of the globe; but I must confess, that every thing I have seen elsewhere is feeble and contemptible, when compared with this day's spectacle.

“When the whole was finished, they entertained us at a public festival in their cabins, and when we departed, dismissed us with these expressive wishes: they prayed that the Great Spirit would favour us with a prosperous voyage; that he would give us an unclouded sky and smooth waters by day, and that we might lie down at night on a beaver blanket, enjoying uninterrupted sleep and pleasant dreams; and that we might find continual protection under the great pipe of peace.—I have been thus particular,” said the Highlander, “in describing the circumstances of this embassy, because you have not disdained to hear the story of my adventures; and I thought that this description of a people so totally unlike all you

have been accustomed to in Europe, might not prove entirely uninteresting."

"We are much obliged to you," said Mr. Barlow, "for all these curious particulars, which are perfectly conformable to all I have heard and read upon the subject. Nor can I consider, without a certain degree of admiration, the savage grandeur of man in his most simple state. The passion for revenge, which marks the character of all uncivilized nations, is certainly to be condemned. But it is one of the constant prejudices of their education; and many of those who call themselves refined, have more to blush at, in that respect, than they are aware of. Few, I am afraid, even in the most refined state of society, have arrived at that sublime generosity, which is able to forgive the injuries of its fellow-creatures, when it has the power to repay them; and I see many around me that are disgraced by the vices of uncivilized Americans, without a claim to their virtues."

"I will not fatigue your ears," continued the Highlander, "with a recital of all the events I was engaged in during the progress of the war. The description of blood and carnage is always disagreeable to a humane mind; and though the perversity of mankind may sometimes render war a necessary evil, the remembrance of its mischiefs is always painful. I will only mention one event, continually lamented in the annals of this country, because it is connected with the untimely fate of my noble friend and gallant leader.

"It was determined by those who governed, that we should march through the woods upon a distant

expedition against the French. The conduct of this enterprise was given to a brave but rash commander, totally unacquainted with the people he had to oppose, and unskilled in the nature of a savage war. We therefore began our march through the same trackless wilds I have described. We proceeded for several days, without any other difficulties than the nature of the country itself produced, and without seeing the face of an enemy. It was in vain that officers of the greatest experience, and particularly my worthy colonel, suggested to our commander the necessity of using every precaution against a dangerous and insidious foe. War is not managed, amid the forests of America, in the same manner as it is conducted upon the plains of Europe. The temper of the people there, conspires with the nature of the country to render it a continual scene of stratagems and surprise. Unincumbered with tents, or baggage, or numerous trains of artillery, the hostile warriors set out in small and chosen parties, with nothing but their arms, and are continually upon the watch to deceive their enemies. Long experience has taught them a degree of sagacity in traversing the woods, which to us is inconceivable. Neither the widest rivers, nor the most extensive forests, can retard them for an instant. A march of a thousand miles is scarcely to them a greater difficulty than the passage of a European army between two neighbouring towns. The woods themselves afford them a continual supply of provisions, in the various animals which they kill by the chase. When they are near their enemies, they frequently lurk all day in thickets, for fear of a discovery, and pursue

their march by night. Hundreds of them sometimes pursue their course in the same line, treading only in each other's steps, and the last of the party carefully covers over the impressions which his fellows have made. When they are thus upon the point of accomplishing their purpose, the very necessities of nature are unheeded; they cease to fire upon the beasts of the forest, lest it should alarm the foe; they feed upon roots or the bark of trees, or pass successive days in a perfect abstinence from food. All this our colonel represented to the general, and conjured him with the strongest entreaties, not to hazard the safety of our army by an incautious progress. He advised him to send out numerous detachments, to beat the bushes and examine the woods; and offered himself to secure the march of the army. But presumption is always blind; our general was unacquainted with any other than European warfare, and could not conceive that naked savages would dare to attack an army of two thousand disciplined troops.

“One morning, the way before us appeared more intricate and obscure than common; the forests did not as usual consist of lofty trees, which afford a tolerably clear prospect between their trunks, but were composed of creeping bushes and impervious thickets. The army marched as usual, with the vain ostentation of military discipline, but totally unprepared for the dreadful scene which followed. At length we entered a gloomy valley, surrounded on every side by the thickest shade, and rendered swampy by the overflowings of a little rivulet. In this situation it was impossible to continue our march without

disordering our ranks; and part of the army extended itself beyond the rest, while another part of the line involuntarily fell behind. In the moment while the officers were employed in rectifying the disorder of their men, a sudden noise of musketry was heard in front, which stretched about twenty of our men upon the field. The soldiers instinctively fired towards the part whence they were attacked, and instantly fell back in disorder. But it was equally vain to retreat or go forward, for it now appeared that we were completely hemmed in. On every side resounded the fatal peals of scattering fire, that thinned our ranks and extended our bravest comrades on the earth. Figure to yourself a shoal of fishes enclosed within the net, that circle in vain the fatal labyrinth in which they are involved; or rather conceive, what I have myself been witness to, a herd of deer surrounded on every side by a band of active and unpitied hunters, that press and gall them on every side, and exterminate them at leisure in their flight. Just such was the situation of our unfortunate countrymen. After a few unavailing discharges, which never annoyed a secret enemy that scattered death unseen, the ranks were broken, and all subordination lost.

“The ground was covered with gasping wretches, and stained with blood; the woods resounded with cries and groans, and fruitless attempts of our gallant officers to rally their men, and check the progress of the enemy. By intervals was heard, more shrill, more dreadful than all the rest, the dismal yell of the victorious savages, who now, emboldened by their success, began to leave the covert, and hew down

those who fled with unrelenting cruelty. As to myself, the description which our colonel had given me of their method of attack, and the precautions to be used against it, rendered me perhaps less disturbed than I otherwise should have been. I remarked that those who stood and those who fled were exposed to equal danger; those who kept their rank and endeavoured to repel the enemy, exposed their persons to their fire, and were successively shot down, as happened to most of our unfortunate officers; while those who fled, frequently rushed headlong upon the very death they sought to avoid. Pierced to the heart at the sight of such a carnage of my gallant comrades, I grew indifferent to life, and abandoned myself to despair; but it was a despair which neither impaired my exertions nor robbed me of the faculties of my mind. 'Imitate me,' I cried, 'my gallant countrymen, and we shall yet be safe. I then directly ran to the nearest tree, and sheltered myself behind its stem; convinced that this precaution alone could secure me from the incessant volleys which darted on every side. A small number of Highlanders followed my example, and, thus secured, we began to fire with more success at the enemy, who now exposed themselves with less reserve. This check seemed to astonish and confound them; and had not the panic been so general, it is possible that this successful effort might have changed the fortune of the fight; for in another quarter the provincial troops that accompanied us behaved with the greatest bravery, and though deserted by the European forces, effected their own retreat. But it was now too late to hope for victory or even

safety; the ranks were broken on every side, the greater part of our officers slain or wounded, and our unfortunate general himself had expiated with his life, his fatal rashness.

“I cast my eyes around, and saw nothing but images of death; and horror, and frantic rage. Yet even then the safety of my noble colonel was dearer to me than my own. I sought him for some time in vain, amid the various scenes of carnage which surrounded me. At length, I discovered him at a distance, almost deserted by his men, yet still attempting to renew the fight, and heedless of the wounds which covered him. Transported with grief and passion, I immediately darted forward to offer him my feeble support; but in the very instant of my arrival, he received a straggling ball in his bosom, and, tottering to a tree, supported his fainting limbs against the trunk. Just in that moment, three of our savage enemies observed his situation, and marked him for their prey; they raised their hideous yell, and darted upon him with the speed and fierceness of wolves. Fury then took possession of my soul; had I possessed a thousand lives, I should have held them cheap in the balance:—I fired with so unerring an aim, that I stretched the foremost on the earth; the second received the point of my bayonet in his breast, and fell in the pangs of death; the third, daunted with the fate of his companions, turned his steps another way. Just then a horse that had lost his rider was galloping along the wood; I bounded across the path, and, seizing him by the bridle, instantly led him to my leader, and conjured him to preserve his glorious life.

He thanked me in the most affectionate manner for my friendship, but bade me preserve my own life. 'As to myself,' said he, 'I do not wish to survive my country's dishonour, and even had I such a wish, the wounds I have received would render all escape impossible.' 'If that is your resolution,' said I, 'we will die together, for I swear by the eternal majesty of my Creator, that I will not leave you.'

"When he saw me thus resolved, he consented to use my assistance, and with infinite difficulty I seated him upon the horse, which, holding by the reins, as I was then light and active, I guided along the wood with no inconsiderable speed. Fortunately for me, we were not observed by any of our savage enemies; so that flying through the thickest part of the forest, we left the danger behind, and were soon removed beyond the sight or hearing of the battle. 'Courage,' said I, 'my noble leader! you are now almost in safety; and I trust you will yet preserve a life so necessary to your friends and country.' He answered me with the kindest expressions, but with a feeble voice: 'Campbell, I have consented to fly, more for the sake of preserving your life, than from any hopes of my own. But since we are at a distance from yonder dreadful scene, permit me to alight; I have consumed my small remaining forces in the way, and now I faint from loss of blood.' He sunk down at this, and would have fallen, but I received him in my arms; I bore him to the next thicket, and strewing grass and leaves upon the ground, endeavoured to prepare him a bed. He thanked me again with gratitude and tenderness, and grasped my hand as he lay

in the very agonies of death; for such it was, although I believed he had only fainted, and long tried every ineffectual method to restore departed life. Thus was I deprived of the noblest officer and kindest friend that ever deserved the attachment of a soldier: twenty years have now rolled over me since that inauspicious day; yet it lives for ever in my remembrance, and never shall be blotted from my soul."

The Highlander then turned away, to hide a tear which did not misbecome his manly countenance; the company seemed all to share his griefs, but Miss Simons above the rest; however, as the natural gentleness of her temper was sufficiently known, no one suspected that she had any particular interest in the relation.

"I sat till night," continued the stranger, "supporting the breathless body of my colonel, and vainly hoping he might return to life. At length I perceived that his noble soul was fled for ever; my own wounds grew stiff and painful, and exhausted nature required a supply of food. I therefore arose, and, finding a spring that trickled down a hill at no great distance, I refreshed myself by a copious draught, and washed the clotted blood away from the hurts I had received. I then crushed some leaves, which the inhabitants of that country imagine salutary, and bound them on with bandages I tore from my linen. I also found a few wild fruits, which past experience had taught me were innocent, with which I allayed the pains of hunger. I then returned to the thicket, and, creeping into the thickest part, endeavoured to compose myself to rest. Strange, gentlemen, as it may appear, nei-

ther the forlorn nature of my situation, nor the dangers with which I was beset, were sufficient to keep me awake. My wearied and exhausted body seemed to triumph over all the agitations of my mind; and I sunk into a sleep as deep and profound as that of death itself.

“ I awoke next morning, with the first rays of the sun; but, more composed, I better understood the difficulties in which I was involved, and the uncertainty of my escape. I was in the midst of an immense desert, totally destitute of human assistance or support. Should I meet with any of my fellow-creatures, I could expect nothing but implacable cruelty; and even if I escaped their vigilance, what method of finding subsistence, or of measuring back, without a guide, the long and tedious march I had trodden? Hope, however, and the vigour of my constitution, still supported me. I reflected, that it is the common lot of man to struggle with misfortunes; that it is cowardice to yield to evils, when present, the representation of which had not deterred me from voluntarily embracing the profession of a soldier; and that the providence of Heaven was as capable of protecting me in the forests of America, as upon my native mountains. I therefore determined to struggle with the difficulties which surrounded me till the last, and to meet my fortune like a man. Yet, as I still by intervals heard the dismal cries of the enemy, and saw their fires at a distance, I lay close till night in the obscurity of my thicket. When all was dark and still, I ventured abroad, and laid in my scanty provision of fruits and herbs, and drank again at the

spring. The pain of my wounds began now to abate a little, though I suffered extremely from the cold, as I did not dare to kindle a fire, from the fear of discovering myself by its light. Three nights and days did I lead this solitary life, in continual dread of the savage parties which scoured all the woods in pursuit of stragglers, and often passed so near my place of retreat, that I gave myself over for lost.

“At length upon the fourth evening, fancying myself a little restored, and that the activity of the enemy might be abated, I ventured out and pursued my march. I scarcely need describe the various difficulties and dangers to which I was exposed in such a journey; however, I still had with me my musket; and as my ammunition was not quite exhausted, I depended upon the woods themselves to supply me with food. I travelled the greater part of the night, involving myself still deeper in these inextricable forests; for I was afraid to pursue the direction of our former march, as I imagined the savages were dispersed along the country in pursuit of the fugitives. I therefore took a direction as nearly as I could judge parallel to the English settlements, and inclining to the south. In this manner I forced my way along the woods all night, and with the morning had reason to think that I had advanced a considerable distance. My wounds began now to pain me afresh with this exertion, and compelled me to allow myself some repose. I chose out the thickest covert I could find, and shrowding myself as well as I was able, was soon overpowered by sleep. I did not awake till the sun had gained the meridian, and, creeping from my

retreat, beheld with some degree of terror an enormous rattle-snake, that was coiled up full in my way, and seemed determined to oppose my passage. This animal is frequent in the southern colonies, and is the most poisonous of all the reptiles that haunt the woods. He is in length from two to six feet, beautifully variegated with different colours; but the most remarkable circumstance attending him is a natural noise that he produces with every motion of his tail, and which occasions too his name. I soon destroyed my hissing foe, and taking courage for the first time to kindle a fire, I roasted him upon the embers, and made the most delicious meal I ever remember, upon his flesh."

"What!" exclaimed Tommy, "is it possible to eat snakes? I thought they had been all over poison."

"Master," replied the Highlander, "the want of food will reconcile us to many meats, which we should scarcely think eatable. Nothing has surprised me more than to see the poor, in various countries, complaining of the scarcity of food, yet throwing away every year thousands of the carcasses of horses, which are full as wholesome and nourishing as beef, and are in many countries preferred to it. But, in general, every animal may be eaten, and affords a salutary food; as to snakes, the poison of them is contained in the hollow of their teeth. When they bite they instil their venom into the wound, which mixes with the blood, and, without a timely remedy, destroys the sufferer. But if you cut off the head, the rest of the

body is not only wholesome but palatable, and I have known it eaten as a delicacy by many inhabitants of the colonies.—Thus refreshed, therefore, I pursued my march through the same thick gloomy country, without meeting the least appearance of a human creature; and at night I cut with a hatchet that I had about me, some boughs, with which I erected a temporary shelter.

“The next day, as I was pursuing my march, I saw a deer bound by me, upon whose shoulders was fixed a fierce and destructive animal that resembles a tiger. This creature, which is about the size of a moderate dog, ascends the trees and hides himself among the branches, till a deer, or any other animal that he can master, passes within his reach. He then darts himself, with a sudden spring, full upon the neck or shoulder of the unfortunate animal, which he continues tearing with so much violence, that he soon dispatches him. This was actually the case with the poor deer that passed me; for he had not run a hundred yards before he fell down in the agonies of death, and his destroyer began to regale himself upon the prey. I instantly saw that this was a lucky opportunity of supplying myself with food for several days; I therefore ran towards the animal, and by a violent shout made him abandon his victim and retire growling into the woods. I then kindled a fire with leaves and sticks, and, cutting off a large slice of venison, I plentifully refreshed myself for my journey. I then packed up as much of the most fleshy parts of the body as I could conveniently carry, and abandoned the rest to wild beasts.

“In this manner did I march for several days, without wanting food, or seeing any probable end of my fatigues. At length I found a lofty mountain before me, which I determined to ascend, imagining that such an elevation might enable me to make some useful discoveries in respect to the nature of the country I had to traverse, and perhaps present me with some appearances of cultivation or inhabitants. I therefore ascended with infinite fatigue a rough and stony ascent of several miles, in which I was frequently obliged to clamber up pointed rocks, and work my way along the edge of dangerous precipices. I however arrived without an accident at the top, which is entirely bare of trees, and, looking round me, beheld a wild and desert country extended to a prodigious distance. Far as my eye could reach, I discovered nothing but forests on every side but one. There the country seemed to be more open, though equally uncultivated, and I saw meadows and savannahs opening one beyond another, bounded at length by a spacious river, whose end and beginning were equally concealed from my eye.

“I was now so weary of this solitary kind of life, that I began to consider the inhabitants themselves with less apprehension; besides, I thought myself out of danger of meeting with the hostile tribes: and all these people, unless irritated by injuries, or stimulated by revenge, are perhaps less strangers to the rites of hospitality than any civilized nation. I therefore reflected, that by directing my course to the river, and following the direction of its waters, I should have

the greatest probability of meeting with some of my fellow-creatures; as the natives build their villages near lakes and streams, and choose their banks as a residence, when they are employed in hunting. I therefore descended the mountain, and entered the level district which I saw before me. I marched along an open champaign country for several hours, covered over with a rank species of grass, and beheld numerous herds of buffaloes grazing all around. It was here that an accident befel me, which I will relate for its singularity, both in respect to the dangers I incurred, and my method of escape.

“As I was thus journeying on, I discovered a prodigious light, that seemed to efface the sun itself, and streak the skies with an angry kind of illumination. I looked round me to discover the cause of this strange appearance, and beheld with equal horror and astonishment, that the whole country behind was in flames. In order to explain this event, I must observe, that all the plains in America produce a rank, luxuriant vegetation, the juices of which are exhausted by the heat of the summer’s sun; it is then as inflammable as straw or fodder; and when a casual spark of fire communicates with it, the flame frequently drives before the wind for miles together, and consumes every thing it meets. This was actually the case at present: far as my eye could reach, the country was all in flames; a powerful wind added fresh fury to the fire, and drove it on with a degree of swiftness which precluded all possibility of flight. I must confess that I was struck with horror at the sudden approach of a death, so new, so dreadful, so unexpected. I

saw it was in vain to fly; the flaming line extended for several miles on every side, and advanced with such velocity, that I considered my fate as inevitable. I looked round me with a kind of mute despair, and began to envy the fate of my comrades who had fallen by honourable wounds in battle. Already did the conflagration scorch me in its approach, accompanied by clouds of smoke that almost suffocated me with their baneful vapour. In this extremity, fortune presented to my mind an instantaneous thought, which, perhaps, was the only possible method of escape. I considered that nothing could stop the conflagration but an actual want of matter to continue it; and therefore, by setting fire to the vegetables before me, I might follow my own path in safety. I hope, gentlemen, that during the course of a long life, you will never have occasion to experience the pleasure which the first glance of this expedient afforded to my mind. I saw myself snatched, beyond expectation, from a strange and painful death, and instantly pulled out, with a trembling hand, the flint and steel upon which my preservation was to depend. I struck a light, and presently kindled the driest grass before me: the conflagration spread along the country; the wind drove it on with inconceivable fury, and I saw the path of my deliverance open before my eyes. In a few seconds a considerable vacancy was burnt before me, which I traversed with the speed of a man that flies from instant death. My feet were scorched with the glowing soil, and several times had I been nearly suffocated with the drift of the pursuing smoke; but every step I made convinced me of the certainty of

my escape, and, in a little time I stopped to consider at leisure the conflagration I had avoided; which, after proceeding to the point whence I set out, was extinguished, as I had foreseen, and delivered me from all apprehension."

"I declare," said Tommy, "this is the most extraordinary thing I ever heard; and yet I can easily conceive it, for I once saw some men set fire to the heath and furzes upon the common, and they burnt so furiously that I was quite afraid to come near the flame."

"I pursued my way," continued the Highlander, "over the smoking soil, which I had rendered bare to a considerable extent, and lodged at night, as usual, under some boughs which I stuck up to defend me. In the morning I set out again, and soon arrived at a spacious lake, upon whose banks I could plainly discern the signs of an American encampment. I hesitated some time, whether I should again conceal myself in the woods, or deliver myself up to their mercy. But I considered that it was impossible long to continue this wandering life; and that, in the end, I must have recourse to some of these savage tribes for assistance. What, therefore, must be done at last, it was fruitless to delay; I had every reason to imagine that the people before me must either be favourable to Great Britain, or at least indifferent to the war; and in either case, from the experience I possessed of the manners of the natives, I did not think I had much to fear. I therefore determined to hazard every thing upon the probability of a favourable reception, and collecting all my resolution, I

marched boldly forward, and soon arrived at the encampment. As soon as I entered the village, the women and children gathered round me with the curiosity natural to mankind at the sight of an unaccustomed object. I formed a favourable conjecture from this apparent ignorance of Europeans, and walking on with a composed step and steady countenance, I at length entered into one of the largest cabins I could find. When I was within, I saw a venerable old man, whom I took to be a chief from his appearance, sitting at his ease upon the ground, and smoking. I saluted him with all the courtesy I was able, and placed myself upon the ground, at some little distance, waiting, with inward anxiety, but external composure, for him to begin the conversation. After he had eyed me for some time with fixed attention, but without either sternness or anger, he calmly took the pipe from his mouth and presented it to me. I received it with infinite satisfaction; for, as I have before remarked, this is always with the American tribes the firmest pledge of peace and a friendly reception. When we had thus been seated for some time in mutual contemplation of each other, he asked me, in a dialect which I understood tolerably well, to eat. I did not think it prudent to refuse any offered civility, and therefore accepted the offer; and, in a little time, a young woman who was in the back part of the hut, set before me some broiled fish and parched maize.

“After I had eaten, my friendly host enquired into my country and the reasons of my visit. I was just enough acquainted with the language he

spoke to be able to understand him, and to give an intelligible, though imperfect answer. I therefore explained to him, as well as I was able, that I had crossed the great water, with the warriors of the king of Britain; that we had been compelled to take up the hatchet against the French and their allies, and that we had actually set out upon an expedition against their colonies; but that we had been surprised by a lurking party in the woods; that in the confusion of the fight I had been separated from the rest, and had wandered several days through the woods in search of my comrades; and that now seeing the tents of my brethren the red men, I had come to visit them, and smoke the pipe of peace in their company. All this I with some difficulty explained to my entertainer, who listened to me with great attention, and then bade me welcome in the name of his nation, which he told me was called the Saukies; he added, that their young men were dispersed through the woods, hunting the deer and buffalo; but they would soon return loaded with provisions, and in the mean time I might share his cabin, and such provisions as he could command.

“I thanked him for his offer, and remained several days in his hut, always entertained with the same hospitality, until the return of the young men from hunting. They came at last in several boats, along the lake, bringing with them a considerable quantity of wild beasts which they had killed. I was received by all the tribe with the same hospitality I had experienced from the old chief; and, as it was necessary to gain their friendship as much as possible, I joined

them in all their hunting and fishing parties, and soon acquired a considerable degree of skill in both.

“Hunting itself has something cruel in the practice; it is a species of war which we wage with brute animals for their spoils; but if ever it can be considered as excusable, it is in these savage nations, who have recourse to it for their subsistence. They are active, bold, and dexterous, to such a degree, in all these exercises, that none of the wild animals they attack have the smallest chance of escape. Their parties generally consist of almost all the youth of their nation, who go in a body to particular districts where they know game is plentiful. Their common method is, when they are arrived at a spot which abounds in deer or buffaloes, to disperse themselves through the woods; and then, alarming the beasts in the neighbourhood, they drive them with shouts and dogs towards some common place, which is always in the middle of all their parties. When they have thus roused their prey, the various squadrons gradually advance towards the centre, till they unite in a circle, and enclose a prodigious number of frightened animals. They then attack them either with fire-arms or arrows, and shoot them down successively. By these means they are sure, in a single day, to destroy a prodigious number of different beasts. But it sometimes happens, that while they are engaged in the chase of other animals, they become a prey themselves to their enemies; who take this method of surprising them in the woods, and gratifying their resentment. This was actually the case with my

friends, the Saukies, and produced a surprising event; the consequence of which was my return to the English colonies in safety.

The Saukies had been long at war with the Iroqueuse, a powerful tribe of Northern Americans in the interest of the French. The Iroqueuse had received intelligence of the situation of the Saukies' encampment, and determined to surprise them. For this purpose, a thousand warriors set out by a secret march through the woods, and travelled with the silence and celerity which are peculiar to all these nations. When they had nearly approached the hunting grounds of their enemies, they happened to be discovered upon their march by four warriors of another nation, who instantly suspected their design, and, running with greater diligence than it was possible so large a body could make, arrived at the encampment of the Saukies, and informed them of the near approach of their enemies. A great council was instantly assembled to deliberate upon the choice of proper measures for their defence. As they were incumbered by their families, it was impracticable to retreat with safety; and it seemed equally difficult to resist so large a force with inferior numbers. While they were in this uncertainty, I considered the nature of their situation, and had the good fortune to find out a resource, which being communicated to my friend the chief, and adopted by the nation, was the means of their safety. I observed that the passage to the Saukie camp, for the Iroqueuse, lay along a narrow slip of land, which extended for near a mile between two lakes. I therefore advised the Saukies to cast

up a strong barrier at the end of the passage; which I showed them how to strengthen with ditches, palisades, and some of the improvements of European fortification. Their number of warriors amounted to about four hundred; these I divided into equal parts, and leaving one to defend the lines, I placed the other in ambuscade along the neighbouring woods.

“Scarcely were these dispositions finished, before the Iroquese appeared, and imagining they were rushing upon an unguarded foe, entered the defile without hesitation. As soon as the whole body was thus imprudently engaged, the other party of the Saukies started from their hiding places, and running to the entrance of the strait, threw up in an instant another fortification, and had the satisfaction to see the whole force of their enemies thus circumvented and caught in a trap. The Iroquese soon perceived the difficulty and danger of escape. They however behaved with that extraordinary composure which is the peculiar characteristic of this people on every occasion. The lakes were at that time frozen over, yet not so hard as to permit them to effect a passage over the ice; and though a thaw succeeded in a short time, it was equally impracticable to pass by swimming, or on rafts. Three days, therefore, the Iroquese remained quiet in this disagreeable situation; and, as if they had nothing to apprehend, diverted themselves all this time with fishing. On the fourth morning they judged the ice sufficiently dissolved to attempt their escape; and therefore, cutting down some trees which grew upon the strait, they formed them into rafts, and embarked their whole force. But this

could not be done without the knowledge of the Saukies, who dispatched a considerable body of warriors to oppose their landing. It is unnecessary to relate all the horrid particulars of the engagement which ensued; I will only mention that the Iroquese at length effected their landing with the loss of half their number, and retreated precipitately to their own country, leaving behind them all the furs and skins which they had taken in their hunting. The share I had had in this success gained me the friendship of all the nation; and, at my desire, they sent some of their young men to guide me through the woods to the English settlements, and took their leave of me with every expression of esteem, and a considerable present of valuable furs.

“These, gentlemen, are the most important and interesting of my adventures; and, as I have already trespassed too long upon your patience, I shall hasten to conclude my story. After this, I was employed in various parts of America and the West Indies, during the rest of the war. I suffered hardships and difficulties innumerable, and acquired, as my father had foretold, a little wisdom at the price of a considerable quantity of blood. When the war was ended, I found myself nearly in the same situation as I began, except the present of my friendly Americans, which I had turned into money and remitted to England. I therefore now began to feel my military enthusiasm abated, and having permission to leave the service, I embraced that opportunity of returning to my country, fully determined to spend the remainder of my life amid my family and friends. I found my father

and mother still living, who received me in the fondest manner. I then employed the little fund I had acquired, to stock a farm, which I hired in the neighbourhood, and where I imagined my care and industry would be sufficient to insure us all a comfortable subsistence. Some little time after, I married a virtuous and industrious young woman, the mother of the unfortunate children who are so much indebted to your bounty. For some time I made a shift to succeed tolerably well: but at length the distresses of my country increasing, I found myself involved in the deepest poverty. Several years of uncommon severity destroyed my cattle, which is the chief support of the Highlanders, and rotted the scanty crops, which were to supply us with food, upon the ground. I cannot accuse myself of either voluntary unthriftiness, or neglect of my business; but there are some situations in which it seems impossible for human exertion to stem the torrent of misfortune. But wherefore should I give pain to such kind and worthy benefactors, by a detail of all the miseries which I, and many of my poor countrymen, have endured? I will therefore only mention, that after having suffered, I think, every distress which human nature is equal to support; after having seen my tender parents, and last, my dear, unfortunate wife, perish by the hardships of our situation, I took the resolution of forever abandoning a country which seemed incapable of supporting its inhabitants. I thought that the milder climate and more fertile soil of America, might perhaps enable a wretched wanderer, who asked no more than food for his starving children, to drag on a little

longer, a miserable life. With this idea, I sold the remainder of my stock, and after having paid whatever was due to my landlord, I found I had just enough to transport myself and family into eternal banishment. I reached a sea-port town, and embarked with my children on board a ship that was setting sail for Philadelphia. But the same ill fortune seemed still to accompany my steps; for a dreadful storm arose, which, after having tossed our vessel during several days, wrecked us at length upon the coast. All the crew, indeed, escaped, and with infinite difficulty I saved these dear, but miserable infants, who now accompany me; but when I reflect upon my situation, in a distant country, without resources, friends, or hopes, I am almost inclined to think that we might all have been happier in the bosom of the ocean."

Here the Highlander finished his story, and all the company were affected with the recital of his distresses. They all endeavoured to comfort him with the kindest expressions and promises of assistance; but Miss Simmons, after she had with some difficulty composed herself enough to speak, asked the man if his name was not Andrew Campbell. The Highlander answered with some surprise, it was. "Then," said she, "you will find that you have a friend, whom, as yet, you are not acquainted with, who has both the ability and the will to serve you. That friend," added she, "seeing all the company were astonished, is no other than my uncle. That Colonel Simmons, whom you have described with so much feeling and affection, was brother to my father, and consequently uncle to myself. It is no wonder that the memory

of such a man should be venerated by all his relations. I have often heard my uncle speak of his untimely death, as the greatest misfortune which ever happened to our family; and I have often seen him read, with tears in his eyes, many of his brother's letters, in which he speaks with the greatest affection of his faithful Highlander, Andrew Campbell."

At these words the poor Highlander, unable to express the strong emotions of his mind, sprang forward in a sudden transport of joy, and, without consideration of circumstances, caught Miss Simmons in his arms, exclaiming at the same time, "Praised be God for this happy and unexpected meeting! Blessed be my shipwreck itself, that has given me an opportunity of seeing, before I die, some of the blood of my dear and worthy colonel!" And perceiving Miss Simmons confused at this abrupt and unexpected salutation, he added, in the most respectful manner: "Pardon me, my honoured young lady, for the improper liberty I have taken; but I was not master of myself, to find, at a time when I thought myself the most forlorn and miserable of the human race, that I was in company with the nearest relation of the man, who, after my own father, I have always loved and revered most." Miss Simmons answered with the greatest affability, that she freely excused the warmth of his affection; and that she would that very day acquaint her uncle with this extraordinary event; who, she did not doubt, would come over with the greatest expedition, to see a person whom he knew so well by name, and who could inform him of so many particulars of her uncle.

And now the company being separated, Tommy, who had listened with silent attention to the story of the Highlander, took an opportunity of following Mr. Barlow, who was walking out: and when he perceived they were alone, he looked at him as if he had some weighty matter to disclose, but was unable to give it utterance. Mr. Barlow, therefore, turned towards him with the greatest kindness, and taking him tenderly by the hand, enquired what he wished. "Indeed, Sir," answered Tommy, almost crying, "I am scarcely able to tell you. But I have been a very bad and ungrateful boy, and I am afraid you no longer have the same affection for me."

MR. BARLOW.

If you are sensible of your faults, my little friend, that is a very great step towards amending them. Let me therefore know what it is, the recollection of which distresses you so much; and, if it is in my power to assist in making you easy, there is nothing, I am sure, which I shall be inclined to refuse you.

TOMMY.

Oh, Sir! your speaking to me with so much goodness hurts me a great deal more than if you were to be very angry. For when people are angry and passionate, one does not so much mind what they say. But when you speak with so much kindness, it seems to pierce me to the very heart, because I know I have not deserved it.

MR. BARLOW.

But if you are sensible of having committed any faults, you may resolve to behave so well for the future, that you may deserve every body's friendship

and esteem. Few people are so perfect as not to err sometimes; and if you are convinced of your errors, you will be more cautious how you give way to them a second time.

TOMMY.

Indeed, Sir, I am very happy to hear you say so—I will then tell you every thing which lies so heavy upon my mind. You must know then, Sir, that, although I have lived so long with you, and, during all that time, you have taken so much pains to improve me in every thing, and teach me to act well to every body, I had no sooner quitted your sight, than I became, I think, a worse boy than ever I was before.

MR. BARLOW.

But why do you judge so severely of yourself, as to think you were become worse than ever? Perhaps you have been a little thoughtless and giddy, and these are faults which I cannot with truth say you were ever free from.

TOMMY.

No, Sir, what I have been guilty of is infinitely worse than ever. I have always been very giddy and very thoughtless; but I never imagined I could have been the most insolent and ungrateful boy in the world.

MR. BARLOW.

You frighten me, my little friend.—Is it possible you can have committed actions that deserve so harsh a name.

TOMMY.

You must judge yourself, Sir; for now I have

begun, I am determined to tell you all. You know, Sir, that when I first came to you, I had a high opinion of myself for being born a gentleman, and a very great contempt for every body in an inferior station.

MR. BARLOW.

I must confess you have alway had some tendency to both those follies.

TOMMY.

Yes, Sir; but you have so often laughed at me upon the subject, and shown me the folly of people's imagining themselves better than others, without any merit of their own, that I was grown a little wiser. Besides, I have so often observed that those I despised could do a variety of things which I was ignorant of, while those who are vain of being gentlemen can do nothing useful or ingenious, that I had begun to be ashamed of my folly. But since I came home, I kept company with a great many fine young gentlemen and ladies, who thought themselves superior to all the rest of the world, and used to despise every one else, and they have made me forget every thing I learned before.

MR. BARLOW.

Perhaps then I was mistaken, when I taught you that the greatest merit any person could have, is to be good and useful; these fine young gentlemen and ladies may be wiser, and have given you better lessons. If that is the case, you will have great reason to rejoice that you have changed so much for the better.

TOMMY.

No, Sir, no; I never thought them either good or wise; for they know nothing but how to dress their hair and buckle their shoes. But they persuaded me that it was necessary to be polite, and talked to me so often upon the subject, that I could not help believing them.

MR. BARLOW.

I am very glad to hear that; it is necessary for every body to be polite. They therefore, I suppose, instructed you to be more obliging and civil in your manners than ever you were before. Instead of doing you any hurt, this will be the greatest improvement you can receive.

TOMMY.

No, Sir, quite the contrary. Instead of teaching me to be civil and obliging, they have made me ruder and worse behaved than ever I was before.

MR. BARLOW.

If that is the case, I fear these fine young gentlemen and ladies undertook to teach you more than they understood themselves.

TOMMY.

Indeed, Sir, I am of the same opinion myself. But I did not think so then, and therefore I did whatever I observed them do, and talked in the same manner as I heard them talk. They used to be always laughing at Harry Sandford: and I grew so foolish, that I did not choose to keep company with him any longer.

MR. BARLOW.

That was a pity, because I am convinced he really

loves you. However, it is of no great consequence, for he has employment enough at home; and, however ingenious you may be, I do not think that he will learn how to manage his land, or raise food, from your conversation. It will, therefore, be better for him to converse with farmers, and leave you to the society of gentlemen. Indeed this I know, has always been his taste; and had not your father pressed him very much to accompany you home, he would have liked much better to avoid the visit. However, I will inform him that you have gained other friends, and advise him, for the future, to avoid your company.

TOMMY.

Oh, Sir! I did not think you could be so cruel. I love Harry Sandford better than any other boy in the world, and I shall never be happy till he forgives me all my bad behaviour, and converses with me again as he used to do.

MR. BARLOW.

But, then, perhaps, you may lose the acquaintance of all those polite young gentlemen and ladies.

TOMMY.

I care very little about that, Sir. But, I fear, I have behaved so ill, that he never will be able to forgive me and love me as he did formerly.

Tommy then went on, and repeated with great exactness the story of his insolence and ingratitude, which had so great an effect upon him, that he burst into tears and cried a considerable time. He then concluded with asking Mr. Barlow if he thought Harry would be ever able to forgive him.

MR. BARLOW.

I cannot conceal from you, my little friend, that you have acted very ill indeed in this affair. However, if you are really ashamed of all your past conduct, and determined to act better, I do not doubt that so generous and good-natured a boy as Harry is, will forgive you all.

TOMMY.

Oh, Sir! I should be the happiest creature in the world. Will you be so kind as to bring him here to-day? and you shall see how I will behave.

MR. BARLOW.

Softly, Tommy, softly. What is Harry to come here for? Have you not insulted and abused him, without reason; and at last, proceeded so far as to strike him, only because he was giving you the best advice, and endeavouring to preserve you from danger? Can you imagine that any human being will come to you in return for such treatment? or at least till you have convinced him that you are ashamed of your passion and injustice, and that he may expect better usage for the future.

TOMMY.

What then must I do, Sir?

MR. BARLOW.

If you want any future connexion with Harry Sandford, it is your business to go to him and tell him so.

TOMMY.

What, Sir! go to a farmer's, to expose myself before all his family?

MR. BARLOW.

Just now you told me you were ready to do every thing, and yet you cannot take the trouble of visiting your friend at his own house. You then imagine that a person does not expose himself by acting wrong, but by acknowledging and amending his faults!

TOMMY.

But what would every body say, if a young gentleman like me were to go and beg pardon of a farmer's son?

MR. BARLOW.

They will probably say, that you have more sense and gratitude than they expected. However, you are to act as you please; with the sentiments you still seem to entertain, Harry will certainly be a very unfit companion, and you will do much better to cultivate the new acquaintance you have made.

Mr. Barlow was then going away, but Tommy burst again into tears, and begged him not to go; upon which Mr. Barlow said, "I do not want to leave you, Tommy, but our conversation is now at an end. You have asked my advice, which I have given you freely. I have told you how you ought to act, if you would preserve the esteem of any good or sensible friend, or prevail upon Harry to excuse your past behaviour. But as you do not approve of what I suggested, you must follow your own opinions."

"Pray, Sir, pray, Sir," said Tommy, sobbing, "do not go. I have used Harry Sandford in the most barbarous manner; my father is angry with me; and if you desert me, I shall have no friend left in the world.

MR. BARLOW.

That will be your own fault, and therefore you will not deserve to be pitied. Is it not in your own power to preserve all your friends, by an honest confession of your faults? Your father will be pleased, Harry Sandford will heartily forgive you, and I shall retain the same good opinion of your character which I have long had.

TOMMY.

And is it really possible, Sir, that you should have a good opinion of me, after all I have told you about myself?

MR. BARLOW.

I have always thought you a little vain and careless, I confess; but, at the same time, I imagined you had both good sense and generosity in your character; I depended upon the first to make you see your faults, and upon the second to correct them.

TOMMY.

Dear Sir, I am very much obliged to you: but you have always been extremely kind and friendly to me.

MR. BARLOW.

And, therefore, I told your father yesterday, who is very much hurt at your quarrel with Harry, that, though a sudden passion might have transported you too far, yet, when you came to consider the matter coolly, you would perceive your faults and acknowledge them; were you not to behave in this manner, I owned I could say nothing in your favour. And I was very much confirmed in this opinion, when I saw the courage you exerted in the rescue of Harry's

lamb, and the compassion you felt for the poor Highlander. A boy (said I) who has so many excellent dispositions, can never persist in bad behaviour. He may do wrong by accident, but he will be ashamed of his errors, and endeavour to repair them by a frank and generous acknowledgment. This has always been the conduct of really great and elevated minds; while mean and grovelling ones alone imagine that it is necessary to persist in faults they have once committed.

Wm. L. Smith
TOMMY.

Oh, Sir!—I will go directly, and entreat Harry to forgive me; I am convinced that all you say is right.—But will you not go with me? Do, pray, Sir, be so good.—

MR. BARLOW.

Gently, gently, my good friend; you are always for doing every thing in an instant. I am very glad you have taken a resolution which will do you so much credit, and give so much satisfaction to your own mind: but before you execute it, I think it will be necessary to speak to your father and mother upon the subject, and, in the mean time, I will go and pay a visit to farmer Sandford, and bring you an account of Harry.

TOMMY.

Do, Sir, be so good; and tell Harry, if you please, that there is nothing I desire so much as to see him; and that nothing shall ever make me behave ill again. I have heard too, Sir, that there was a poor black, who came begging to us, who saved Harry

from the bull; if I could but find him out, I would be good to him as long as I live.

Mr. Barlow commended Tommy very much for dispositions so full of gratitude and goodness; and taking leave of him, went to communicate the conversation he had just had to Mr. Merton. That gentleman felt the sincerest pleasure at the account, and entreated Mr. Barlow to go directly to prepare Harry to receive his son. "That little boy," added he, "has the noblest mind that ever adorned a human being; nor shall I be ever happy till I see my son acknowledging all his faults, and entreating forgiveness; for, with the virtues that I have discovered in his soul, he appears to me a more eligible friend and companion than noblemen or princes."

Mr. Barlow, therefore, set out on foot, though Mr. Merton would have sent his carriage and servants to attend him, and soon arrived at Mr. Sandford's farm. It was a pleasant spot, situated upon the gentle declivity of a hill, at the foot of which wound along a swift and clear little stream. The house itself was small, but warm and convenient, furnished with the greatest simplicity, but managed with perfect neatness. As Mr. Barlow approached, he saw the owner himself guiding a plough through one of his own fields, and Harry, who had now resumed the farmer, directed the horses. But when he saw Mr. Barlow coming across the field, he stopped his team, and letting fall his whip, sprang forward to meet him, with all the unaffected eagerness of joy. As soon as Harry had saluted Mr. Barlow, and enquired after his

health, he asked him with the greatest kindness after Tommy; for I fancy, Sir, (said he,) by the way which I see you come, you have been at Mr. Merton's house. "Indeed I have," replied Mr. Barlow; "but I am very sorry to find that Tommy and you are not upon as good terms as you formerly were.

HARRY.

Indeed, Sir, I am very sorry for it myself. But I do not know that I have given Master Merton any reason to change his sentiments about me: and though I do not think he has treated me as well as he ought to do, I have the greatest desire to hear that he is well.

MR. BARLOW.

That you might have known yourself, had you not left Mr. Merton's house so suddenly, without taking leave of any one; even your friend Mr. Merton, who has always treated you with so much kindness.

HARRY.

Indeed, Sir, I shall be very unhappy if you think I have done wrong; but be so good as to tell me how I could have acted otherwise. I am very sorry to appear to accuse Master Merton, neither do I bear any resentment against him for what he has done; but since you speak to me upon the subject, I shall be obliged to tell the truth.

MR. BARLOW.

Well, Harry, let me hear it. You know I shall be the last person to condemn you, if you do not deserve it.

HARRY.

I know your constant kindness to me, Sir, and I

always confide in it: however, I am not sensible now that I am in fault. You know, Sir, that it was with great unwillingness I went to Mr. Merton's, for I thought there would be fine gentlemen and ladies there, who would ridicule my dress and manners; and though Master Merton has been always very friendly in his behaviour towards me, I could not help thinking that he might grow ashamed of my company at his own house.

MR. BARLOW.

Do you wonder at that, Harry, considering the difference there is in your rank and fortune?

HARRY.

No, Sir, I cannot say I do; for I generally observe that those who are rich will scarcely treat the poor with common civility. But, in this particular case, I did not see any reason for it. I never desired Master Merton to admit me to his company, or invite me to his house, because I knew that I was born and bred in a very inferior station. You were so good as to take me to your house, and there I became acquainted with him; and if I was then much in his company, it was because he seemed to desire it himself, and I always endeavoured to treat him with the greatest respect.

MR. BARLOW.

That, indeed, is true, Harry; in all your little plays and studies, I have never observed any thing but the greatest mildness and good-nature on your part.

HARRY.

I hope, Sir, it has never been otherwise. But

though I have the greatest affection for Master Merton, I never desire to go home with him. What sort of a figure could a poor boy like me make at a gentleman's table, among little masters and misses that powder their hair, and wear buckles as big as our horses carry upon their harness? If I attempted to speak, I was always laughed at, or if I did any thing, I was sure to hear something about clowns and rustics! And yet, I think, though they were all gentlemen and ladies, you would not much have approved of their conversation, for it was about nothing but plays, and dress, and trifles of that nature. I never heard one of them mention a single word about saying their prayers, or being dutiful to their parents, or doing any good to the poor.

MR. BARLOW.

Well, Harry, but if you did not like their conversation, you surely might have borne it with patience for a little while: and then, I heard something about your being quarrelsome.

HARRY.

Oh, Sir! I hope not.—I was, to be sure, once a little passionate, but that I could not help, and I hope you will forgive me. There was a modest, sensible young lady, who was the only person that treated me with any kindness; and a bold, forward, ill-natured boy, affronted her in the grossest manner, only because she took notice of me. Could I help taking her part? Have you not told me too, Sir, that every person, though he should avoid quarrels, has a right to defend himself when he is attacked?

MR. BARLOW.

Well, Harry, I do not much blame you, from the circumstances I have heard of that affair: but why did you leave Mr. Merton's family so abruptly, without speaking to any body, or thanking Mr. Merton himself for the civilities he had shown you? Was that right?

HARRY.

Oh, dear, Sir, I have cried about it several times, for I think I must appear very rude and ungrateful to Mr. Merton. But as to Master Tommy, I did not leave him while I thought I could be of any use. He treated me, I must say, in a very unworthy manner; he joined with all the other fine little gentlemen in abusing me, only because I endeavoured to persuade them not to go to a bull-baiting; and then at last he struck me. I did not strike him again, because I loved him so much, in spite of all his unkindness; nor did I leave him till I saw he was quite safe in the hands of his own servants. And then, how could I go back to his house, after what he had done to me? I did not choose to complain of him to Mr. Merton; and how could I behave to him as I had done before, without being guilty of meanness and falsehood? And therefore I thought it better to go home, and desire you to speak to Mr. Merton, and entreat him to forgive my rudeness.

MR. BARLOW.

Well, Harry, I can inform you that Mr. Merton is perfectly satisfied upon that account. But there is one circumstance you have not yet mentioned, my

little friend, and that is your saving Tommy's life from the fury of the enraged bull.

HARRY.

As to that, Sir, I hope I should have done the same for any human creature. But I believe that neither of us would have escaped, if it had not been for the poor courageous black, who came to our assistance.

MR. BARLOW.

I see, Harry, that you are a boy of a noble and generous spirit, and I highly approve of every thing you have done; but, are you determined to forsake Tommy Merton for ever, because he has once behaved ill?

HARRY.

I, Sir! no, I am sure. But, though I am poor, I do not desire the acquaintance of any body who despises me. Let him keep company with his gentlemen and ladies, I am satisfied with companions in my own station. But, surely, Sir, it is not I that forsake him, but he that has cast me off.

MR. BARLOW.

But if he is sorry for what he has done, and only desires to acknowledge his faults, and obtain your pardon.

HARRY.

Oh, dear, Sir! I should forget every thing in an instant. I knew Master Tommy was always a little passionate and headstrong; but he is at the same time generous and good-natured; nor would he, I am sure, have treated me so ill, if he had not been encouraged to it by the other young gentlemen.

MR. BARLOW.

Well, Harry, I believe your friend is thoroughly sensible of his faults, and that you will have little to fear for the future. He is impatient till he sees you and asks your forgiveness.

HARRY.

Oh, Sir, I should forgive him if he had beaten me an hundred times. But, though I cannot leave the horses now, if you will be so kind as to wait a little, I dare say my father will let me go when he leaves off ploughing.

MR. BARLOW.

No, Harry, there is no occasion for that. Tommy has indeed used you ill, and ought to acknowledge it; otherwise he will not deserve to be trusted again. He will call upon you, and tell you all he feels upon the occasion. In the mean time I was desired, both by him and Mr. Merton, to enquire after the poor negro who served you so materially, and saved you from the bull.

HARRY.

He is at our house, Sir; for I invited him home with me; and, when my father heard how well he had behaved, he made him up a little bed over the stable, and gives him victuals every day; and the poor man seems very thankful and industrious, and says he would gladly do any kind of work to earn his subsistence.

Mr. Barlow then took his leave of Harry, and, after having spoken to his father, returned to Mr. Merton. During his absence, Mr. Simmons had arrived there to fetch away his niece; but, when he

had heard the story of the Highlander, he perfectly recollected his name and character, and was touched with the sincerest compassion for his sufferings. Upon conversing with the poor man, he found that he was extremely well acquainted with agriculture, as well as truly industrious, and therefore instantly proposed to settle him in a small farm of his own, which happened to be vacant. The poor man received this unexpected change in his fortune with tears of joy, and every mark of unaffected gratitude; and Mr. Merton, who never wanted generosity, insisted upon having a share in his establishment. He proposed to supply him with the necessary instruments of agriculture, and a couple of horses, to begin the culture of his land. Just in that moment, Mr. Barlow entered, and, when he had heard, with the sincerest pleasure, the improvement of his circumstances, begged permission to share in so benevolent an action. "I have an excellent milch cow," said he, "which I can very well spare, whose milk will speedily recruit the strength of these poor children; and I have half a dozen ewes and a ram, which, I hope, under Mr. Campbell's management, will soon increase to a numerous flock."

The poor Highlander seemed almost frantic with such a profusion of unexpected blessings, and said, that he wished nothing more than to pass the remainder of his days in such a generous nation, and to be enabled to show at least the sentiments which such undeserved generosity had excited.

At night, Mr. Merton, who was desirous, by every method, to support the good impressions which had now taken possession of Tommy's mind, proposed

that Miss Simmons should favour them with the conclusion of the story which she had begun the night before. That young lady instantly complied, and then read them,

THE CONCLUSION OF THE STORY OF SOPHRON AND
TIGRANES.

THE venerable Chares continued his narration thus: "I passed several months among the Arabians, delighted with the simplicity of their life and the innocence of their manners: and, would to heaven, (added he with a sigh,) that I had accepted their friendly invitations, and never quitted the silence of their hospitable deserts! How many scenes should I have avoided, which fill these aged eyes with tears, and pierce my soul with horror, as often as I recollect them! I should not have been witness to such a waste of human blood, nor traced the gradual ruin of my country. I should not have seen our towns involved in flames, nor our helpless children the captives of fell barbarians. But it is in vain for human beings to repine at the just decrees of Providence, which have consigned every people to misery and servitude, who abandon virtue, and attach themselves to the pursuit of pleasure.

"I left Arabia, with a heart penetrated with gratitude and admiration for its virtuous and benevolent inhabitants. They dismissed me with every mark of kindness and hospitality, guided me over their dreary deserts, and, at parting, presented me with one of

those beautiful horses, which are the admiration of all the surrounding nations. I will not trouble you with an account of the different countries which I wandered over, in search of wisdom and experience. At length I returned to my native city, determined to pass the rest of my life in obscurity and retirement: for the result of all my observations was, that he is happiest, who passes his time in innocent employments and the observation of nature. I had seen the princes and nobles of the earth repining in the midst of their splendid enjoyments, disgusted with the empty pageantry of their situation, and wishing, in vain, for the humble tranquillity of private life. I had visited many of the principal cities in several countries where I had travelled, but I had uniformly observed, that the miseries and crimes of mankind increased with their numbers. I therefore determined to avoid the general contagion, by fixing my abode in some sequestered spot, at a distance from the passions and pursuits of my fellow-creatures. I collected the remainder of my effects, and with them purchased a little farm and vineyard, in a beautiful and solitary spot near the sea. Soon afterwards I married a virtuous young woman, and, in her society, enjoyed for several years as great a degree of tranquillity as generally falls to the lot of man. I did not disdain to exercise with my own hands the different employments of agriculture; for I thought man was dishonoured by that indolence which renders him a burden to his fellow-creatures, not by that industry which is necessary to the support of his species. I therefore sometimes guided the plough with my own

hands, sometimes laboured in a little garden which supplied us with excellent fruits and herbs. I tended the cattle, whose patient labour enabled us to subdue the soil, and considered myself as only repaying part of the obligations I had received. My wife too exercised herself in domestic cares: she milked the sheep and goats, and chiefly prepared the food of the family. Amid my other employments, I did not entirely forget the study of philosophy, which had charmed me so much in my early youth. I frequently observed, with admiration, the wisdom and contrivance which were displayed in all the productions of nature, and the perfection of all her works. I used to walk amid the coolness and stillness of the evening, feeding my mind with pleasing meditations upon the power and wisdom which have originally produced and still support this frame of things. I turned my eyes upon the earth, and saw it covered with innumeraule animals, that sported upon its surface, and found, each according to his nature, subsistence adapted to his wants. I saw the air and water themselves teeming with life, and peopled with innumerable swarms of insects. I saw, that throughout the whole extent of creation, as far as I was capable of observing it, nothing was waste or desolate; every thing was replete with life, and adapted to support it. These reflections continually excited in my mind new gratitude and veneration for that mysterious Being, whose goodness presides over such an infinite variety of beings. I endeavoured to elevate my thoughts to contemplate his nature and qualities; I however found my faculties too bounded to compre-

hend the infinite perfections of his nature. I therefore contented myself with imperfectly tracing him in his works, and adoring him as the common friend and parent of all his creatures.

“Nor did I confine myself to these speculations, however sublime and consolatory to the human heart. Destined as we are to inhabit this globe of earth, it is our interest to be acquainted with its nature and the properties of its productions. For this reason, I particularly examined all the vegetables which are capable of becoming the food of man, or of the various animals which contribute to his support; I studied their qualities, the soil in which they delighted, and the improvements which might be made in every species. I sometimes wandered among the neighbouring mountains, and wherever the fall of rocks, or the repeated violence of torrents, had borne away the soil, I considered with silent admiration, the various substances which we call by the common name of earth. These I used to collect and mingle with the mould of my own garden, by which means I frequently made useful discoveries in fertilizing the soil, and increasing the quantity of food.

“I also considered the qualities of the air which surrounds and sustains all living animals. I particularly remarked the noxious or salutary effects it is able to produce upon their constitutions, and, by these means, was frequently enabled to give useful councils to all the neighbourhood. A large tract of ground had been formerly deluged by the sea, and the waters, finding no convenient vent, spread themselves all around, and converted a large extent of soil

into a filthy marsh. Every year, when the heat of summer prevailed, the atmosphere was filled with putrid exhalations, which produced fever and pestilential disorders among the inhabitants. Touched with compassion for the evils which they endured, I persuaded them to undertake the task of draining the soil, and letting off the superfluous waters. This I instructed them to do with such success, that, in a short time, an unwholesome desert became covered with the most luxuriant harvests, and was deprived of all its noxious influence. By thus rendering my services useful to my fellow-creatures, I received the purest reward which can attend the increase of knowledge, the consciousness of performing my duty, and humbly imitating that Being whose goodness is as general and unbounded as his power.

“ Amid these tranquil and innocent employments, my life flowed gently away like a clear and even stream; I was a stranger to avarice, to ambition, and to all the cares which agitate the bulk of mortals. Alternate labour and study preserved the vigour both of body and mind; our wants were few and easily gratified; we chiefly subsisted upon the liberal returns of the earth, and seldom polluted our table with the bodies of slaughtered animals. One only child, the unfortunate girl who owes her preservation to the courage of this young man, was granted to our prayers. But in her we found enough to exercise all the affections of our minds. We hung with ecstasy upon her innocent smiles, and remarked her opening graces with all the partiality of parental fondness. As she grew up, her mother instructed her in all the arts and

employments of her sex; while I, who already saw the tempest gathering, which has since burst with such fatal fury upon my country, thought it necessary to arm her mind with all the firmness which education can bestow. For this reason, I endeavoured to give both to her mind and body, a degree of vigour which is seldom found in the female sex. As soon as she was sufficiently advanced in strength to be capable of the lighter labours of husbandry and gardening, I employed her as my constant companion.

“Selene, for that was her name, soon acquired a dexterity in all the rustic employments, which I considered with equal pleasure and admiration. If women are in general feeble both in body and mind, it arises less from nature than from education. We encourage a vicious indolence and inactivity, which we falsely call delicacy; instead of hardening their minds by the severer principles of reason and philosophy, we breed them to useless arts, which terminate in vanity and sensuality. In most of the countries which I had visited, they are taught nothing of a higher nature than a few modulations of the voice, or useless postures of the body; their time is consumed in sloth or trifles, and trifles become the only pursuits capable of interesting them. We seem to forget, that it is upon the qualities of the female sex, that our own domestic comforts, and the education of our children, must depend. And what are the comforts or the education which a race of beings, corrupted from their infancy, and unacquainted with all the duties of life, are fitted to bestow? To touch a musical instrument with useless skill, to exhibit their natural or

affected graces to the eyes of indolent and debauched young men, to dissipate their husbands' patrimony in riotous and unnecessary expences—these are the only arts cultivated by women, in most of the polished nations I had seen. And the consequences are uniformly such as may be expected to proceed from such polluted sources—private misery and public servitude.

But Selene's education was regulated by different views, and conducted upon severer principles; if that can be called severity, which opens the mind to a sense of moral and religious duties, and most effectually arms it against the inevitable evils of life. With the rising sun she left her bed, and accompanied me to the garden or the vineyard. Her little hands were employed in shortening the luxurious shoots of fruitful trees, that supplied our table with wholesome and delicious fruits; or in supporting the branches of such as sunk beneath their load. Sometimes she collected water from a clear and constant rill that rolled along the valley, and recruited the force of plants that were exhausted by the sun. With what delight did I view her innocent cheerfulness and assiduity! With what pleasure did she receive the praises which I gave to her skill and industry; or hear the lessons of wisdom and the examples of virtuous women, which I used to read her at evening, out of the writings of celebrated philosophers which I had collected in my travels!

“ But such a life was too unchequered with misfortune to last. The first stroke which attacked and almost destroyed my hopes of good, was the untimely

loss of my dear and virtuous wife. The pestilential heats of autumn overpowered her tender frame, and raised a consuming fever in her veins: for some time she struggled against the disease, but at length her pure and innocent spirit forsook this earth for ever, and left me, comfortless and forlorn, to mourn her loss.

“I will not, my worthy hosts, attempt to describe the inexpressible distress which seized my soul at seeing myself thus deserted. There are some philosophers who aspire to triumph over human feelings, and consider all tender affections as disgraceful weaknesses; for my part, I have never pretended to that degree of insensibility. I have, indeed, opposed as criminal, that habitual acquiescence in sorrow which renders us unfit for the discharge of our duties; but while I have endeavoured to act, I have never blushed at feeling, like a man. Even now that time has mitigated the keenness of the smart, I feel the habitual anguish of an incurable wound. But let me rather hasten to relate the few remaining events of a uniform, unvaried life, than detain you with a useless repetition of my sorrows.

“Scarcely had time afforded me a feeble comfort, when the recollection of past misfortunes was almost extinguished by the new ones which overwhelmed my country. The fertile plains of Syria abounded in all the necessaries and conveniences of life. The vine seemed to grow spontaneously in every valley, and offer its luxuriant produce to every hand. The industrious insect, which spins the wonderful substance called silk out of its bowels, though lately in-

roduced into that part of Asia, seemed to receive new vigour from the mildness of the climate. Corn and oil, the noblest fruits, and the most salubrious herbs, were found in the garden of every peasant; and the herds of cattle and horses, which wandered over our luxuriant pastures, equalled or surpassed all I had observed in other countries. But this profusion of blessings, instead of being attended with any beneficial effects, produced nothing but a foolish taste for frivolous employment and sensuality. Feasts, and dances, and music, the tricks of players, and exhibitions of buffoons, were more attended to than all the serious and important cares of life. Every young man was a critic in the science of adjusting the folds of his robe, or of giving a studied negligence to his hair; every young woman was instructed in every art that serves to consume time or endanger modesty. Repeat to them an idle tale, the tricks of a gamester, or the adventures of a singing girl, and every audience listened with mute attention to the wonderful narration; but tell them of the situation of their country, the wretched state of their civil and military discipline, or of the numerous and warlike tribes of barbarians which surround them, and every auditor would steal away in silence, and leave the uninteresting theme.

“In such a state of things it was not long to be expected that my countrymen would be permitted to hold the riches they abused, and wanted firmness to defend. A warlike tribe of barbarians burst forth from the northern mountains of Asia, and spread themselves over our fertile plains, which they laid waste like a consuming tempest. After a few ineffec-

tual skirmishes, which only served to expose their weakness to the contempt of their enemies, they yielded without opposition to the invader; in this, indeed, more wise than to irritate him by a fruitless resistance; and thus, in a few weeks, the leader of an obscure tribe of barbarians saw himself become a powerful monarch, and possessor of one of the richest provinces of Asia.

“I was sitting one evening at the door of my cottage, and gazing upon the fading glory of the setting sun, when a man of a majestic appearance, but with something ferocious in his look, attended by several others, passed by. As he approached my little garden, he seemed to view it with satisfaction, and to unbend the habitual sternness of his look: I asked him if he would enter in and taste the fruits with his companions. He accepted my offer; and, entering into a shady arbour, I brought him the most palatable fruits I could find, with milk and other rustic fare, such as my farm afforded. He seemed pleased with his entertainment, and when he was departing, thanked me with great affability, and bade me ask a favour in return; ‘which,’ added he, with a certain degree of conscious pride, ‘you can scarcely make too great either for my gratitude or power.’ ‘If,’ answered I, (for I began to suspect that it was Arsaces, the leader of these barbarians,) ‘your power is indeed equal to every boon, give peace and liberty to my country.’ ‘The first,’ said he, ‘I have already given; and, as to the second, it is impossible; their vices and effeminacy render them incapable of enjoying it. Men that have neither virtue, temperance,

nor valour, can never want a master; even though Arsaces were to withdraw his conquering troops. But ask again,' added he, 'something for thyself, and let the favour be worthy me to bestow.' 'Heaven,' answered I, with a smile, 'has already given every thing that I can want, when it gave the earth fertility, and me the power to labour. All, therefore, that I request, O mighty conqueror, is, that you will please to order your men to step aside from the newly-cultivated ground, and not destroy my vegetables.' 'By heavens,' said Arsaces, turning to his companions, 'there is something elevated in the tranquillity and composure of this man's mind; and, were I not Arsaces, I should be with pleasure Chares.' He then departed, but ordered me to attend him the next day at the camp, and gave strict orders that none of the soldiers should molest me, or injure my humble residence.

"I attended the great Arsaces at the time he had appointed, and traversed the encampment of his troops with admiration and regret. This people was a tribe of that mighty empire which is called Scythia, whose inhabitants have so often issued from their deserts, for the conquest and destruction of their neighbours. This country extends to an unknown length behind the most fertile districts of Europe and Asia. The climate is cold in winter, and the earth for several months covered with snow; but in summer it feels the enlivening influence of the sun, and for that reason is possessed of an amazing degree of fertility. But as the inhabitants live remote from the sea, and possess few navigable rivers, they are little acquainted with

agriculture or the arts of life. Instead of trusting to the increase of their fields for food, they raise prodigious herds of cattle and horses in the luxuriant pastures which every where abound. The Scythians, like the Arabians, wander over these immense spaces without a fixed or permanent residence. By the side of lakes and rivers, where the verdure is more constant, and the vegetation stronger, they generally encamp, until the heats of the summer compel them to ascend the mountains and seek a cooler residence. Their houses are composed of slender poles, covered with skins or a coarse cloth, and therefore easily erected, or taken down and stowed in waggons, for the convenience of transporting them in their marches. Their diet is answerable to the poverty of their habitations. They milk their herds, and above all, their mares, and preserve the produce in large bottles, for months together. This sour and homely mess is to them the greatest dainty, and composes the chief of their nourishment. To this they add the flesh of their cattle and horses, which they kill when afflicted with disease, but rarely in health.

“This is the simple and uniform life of all the Scythians; but this simplicity renders them formidable to all their neighbours, and irresistible in war. Unsoftened by ease or luxury, unacquainted with the artificial wants of life, these nations pass their lives in manly exercises and rustic employments. But horsemanship is the greatest pride and passion of their souls; nor is there any individual who does not at least possess several of these noble animals. These,

though small in size, are admirably adapted for the fatigues of war and the chase, and endowed with incomparable swiftness. As to the Scythians themselves, they excel all other nations, unless it be the Arabs, in their courage and address in riding. Without a saddle, and even a bridle, their young men will vault upon an unbacked courser, and keep their seats in spite of all his violent efforts, till they have rendered him tame and obedient to their will.

“In their military expeditions they neither regard the obstacles of nature, nor the inclemencies of the season, and their horses are accustomed to traverse rocks and mountains with a facility that is incredible. If they reach a river, instead of waiting for the tedious assistance of boats and bridges, the warrior divests himself of his clothes and arms, which he places in a bundle upon his horse's back, and then, plunging into the stream, conducts him over by the bridle. Even in the midst of winter, when the hatred of other nations gives way to the inclemencies of the season, the Scythian follows his military labours; and rejoices to see the earth thickly covered with frost and snow, because it affords him a solid path in his excursions. Neither the severest cold nor the most violent storms can check his ardour. Wrapt up in the thick furs of animals, the patient horseman pursues his march, while all his food for weeks together is comprised in a little bag of seeds or corn. Javelins, and bows and arrows, are the arms which these people are taught from their infancy to use with surprising dexterity: and, no less dangerous when they fly than when they charge the enemy in front, they are accustomed to

shoot with an unerring aim at their pursuers, and turn the fortune of the battle.

“Such men are scarcely to be conquered by the efforts of the most powerful nations or sovereigns; and therefore, the proudest conquerors of the world have failed in their attempts to subdue them. Darius, one of the greatest kings which the vast empire of Persia ever obeyed, once attempted the exploit, and had nearly perished in the attempt.

“He advanced with a powerful army, but ill prepared for such an expedition, into the Scythian wastes. The inhabitants, well acquainted with the most effectual methods of defence, transported their families and herds into the interior parts of the country, and, mounting their fleetest horses, seemed to fly before the monarch. Infatuated with pride and confidence, he pursued the chase for several days, until he found himself in the midst of solitary deserts, totally destitute of all that human wants require, where his army could neither advance nor retire without equal danger of perishing by thirst and famine.

“When they saw him thus involved, the Scythian horsemen began to check their speed; instead of flying, as usual, they hemmed him in on every side, and harassed the army with continual attacks. It was then they sent a present to the Persian king, whose mysterious meaning increased the terrors of his situation. A Scythian, mounted upon a fiery steed, entered the camp at full speed, and, regardless of danger or opposition, penetrated even to the royal tent, where Darius was holding a council with his nobles. While they were all amazed at this extraordinary boldness,

the man leaped lightly from his horse, and placing a little bundle upon the ground, vaulted up again with inconceivable agility, and retired with the same happy expedition. The curiosity of the monarch made him instantly order the packet to be examined, which contained only a mouse, a bird, a fish, and a bundle of arrows. Silence and astonishment for some time seized the assembly; till, at length, the king observed, that he thought the present which the Scythians had sent, could signify nothing but their submission to his arms. 'The mouse,' said he, 'must represent the earth, because he resides in holes which he digs in the soil; the fish inhabits the waters, and the bird resides in air: by sending me, therefore, all these various animals, they mean to signify that they resign their air, their waters, and their earth, to my dominion. Nor is the bundle of arrows more difficult to be explained; these constitute their principal defence, and, by sending them to an enemy, they can intimate nothing but terror and submission.'

"All who were present applauded this discourse of the monarch, excepting Gobrias, a man of singular wisdom and experience, who, when he was pressed to declare his sentiments, spoke to him thus: 'It is with the greatest reluctance, O king, that I find myself compelled to explain these presents of our enemies in a very different manner. That the Scythians, who have hitherto shown no marks either of fear or submission, should, on a sudden, feel so great a terror of the Persian arms, I cannot easily believe; more especially when I consider, that our army is very much reduced by the distress it has suffered, and environed

on every side by the enemy, whose boldness visibly increases with our necessities. What, therefore, I should infer from this extraordinary present is this; they intimate that, unless, like the mouse, you can dig your passage through the earth, or skim the air like the bird, or glide through waters with the fish, you shall certainly perish by the Scythian arrows.'

"Such was the sentiment of Gobrias, and all the assembly were struck with the evident truth of his interpretation. The king himself began to perceive and repent his rashness; instead of advancing further into deserts which afforded no subsistence, he resolved to attempt a retreat. This, however, he was not able to effect, without the loss of the greatest part of his troops, who perished by thirst and famine, and the continual attacks of the enemy.

"Nor was the expedition of Lysimachus, another powerful king, against this people, less memorable or less unfortunate. His army was defeated, and he himself taken prisoner; but, instead of meeting with that cruelty which we are accustomed to expect from barbarians, he experienced the greatest moderation and humanity from his conquerors. The general of the Scythians invited his captive to a solemn festival, in which he took care to assemble every circumstance of luxury and magnificence which prevails in polished nations. The most exquisite meats were served up to table, and the most generous wines sparkled in golden bowls of the exactest workmanship. Lysimachus was equally delighted with the elegance of the repast and the politeness of the entertainer; but he was extremely surprised, that, instead of sharing in the feast, or even

sitting down at table, the Scythian leader reposed in a corner of the tent, upon the bare ground, and satisfied his hunger with the most coarse and ordinary fare, prepared with all the simplicity of his country's manners. When the entertainment was finished, he asked Lysimachus which method of life appeared to him the most agreeable. Lysimachus could not conceal his preference of the more refined and luxurious dainties, or his dislike of the Scythian diet. 'If, therefore,' replied his generous host, 'you feel so great a contempt for what this country produces, and so strong a preference for the productions of your own, what but madness, O king, can have tempted you to come so far, in order to subdue men that live in a manner you despise? Is it not much greater wisdom to be contented with those advantages which you prize so highly, than to expose them to a certain hazard, for the chance of acquiring what would afford no pleasure or satisfaction? But let this lesson be sufficient to teach you moderation. A country which produces nothing but iron is not easily conquered; nor are men, who have been from their infancy inured to every hardship, to be vanquished by curled and perfumed soldiers, who cannot live without baths, and music, and daily feasts. Be contented, therefore, for the future, to number the Scythians among your friends; and rather pray that the gods may keep them in ignorance of the superiority of your method of living, lest a desire of tasting it should tempt them to desert their own country and invade yours.' With this discourse he generously restored Lysimachus to

liberty, and suffered him to lead back the shattered remains of his numerous army.

“Such was the nation which had invaded Syria, and easily triumphed over the efforts of an effeminate and unwarlike people. As I passed through the camp, I was astonished at the order and regularity which prevailed among these barbarians. Some were exercising their horses in the mimic representation of a battle; part fled with incredible speed, while the rest pursued, and darted blunted javelins at their antagonists. Yet even those who fled would frequently turn upon their pursuers, and make them repent their rashness. Some, while their horses were running in full speed, would vault from off their backs to others which accompanied them. Some would gallop by a mark erected for their arrows, and when they had passed it a considerable way, turn themselves round upon their horses and transfix it with an unerring aim. I saw many who vaulted upon their horses, and placed themselves between two naked swords, which would have given them certain death, had they swerved ever so little from the just direction. In another part of the camp, I observed the children, who imitated all the actions of their fathers, and bended little bows adapted to their strength, or guided horses of an inferior stature along the plain. Their women were indeed inferior to the Syrians in beauty and elegance, but seemed to be of a more robust constitution, and more adapted to produce and educate warriors.

“I saw no gold, no jewels, no vain and costly apparel; but all seemed busy in domestic cares, pre-

paring the food of their families, or tending upon their infants. At length I reached the royal tent, which scarcely differed from the rest in its structure or simplicity, and was immediately introduced to the great Arsaces. He received me with a courtesy which had nothing of the barbarian in it, seated me familiarly by his side, and entered into a long conversation with me upon the laws, and manners, and customs of the different nations I had seen. I was surprised at the vigour and penetration which I discovered in this untutored warrior's mind. Unbiassed by the mass of prejudices which we acquire in cities, even from our earliest childhood, unincumbered by forms and ceremonies which contract the understanding while they pretend to improve the manners, he seemed to possess a certain energy of soul which never missed the mark. Nature in him had produced the same effects which study and philosophy do in others. But what amazed me more than all, was to find this Scythian chief as well acquainted with the state and consequences of our manners, as if he had passed his life in Greece or Syria, instead of the plains and forests of his own domain. He entertained a rooted contempt for all the arts, which soften the body and mind, under the pretence of adding to the elegancies of life; 'these,' he said, 'were more efficacious agents to reduce men to slavery, than the swords and arrows of their enemies.'

"One day I remember that some of our principal men, judging of the mind of their conqueror by their own, brought to him a celebrated dancer; who, at that time, engaged the whole attention of our city, and seemed to interest it much more than the loss of

liberty. This man, who did not doubt that he should enchant the soul of a Scythian barbarian, by the same arts which had enraptured his refined audiences at home, exerted himself with an agility that extorted the loudest applause from all the spectators but Arsaces. At length, one of our countrymen took the liberty of asking the monarch, what he thought of this extraordinary performance: 'I think,' replied he, coldly, 'that it would gain him great credit in a nation of monkeys.'

"Another time, he was present at the exhibitions of a celebrated musician, who was reputed to possess unrivalled skill in playing soft and melting tunes upon the lyre. All the audience seemed to feel the influence of his art, by their inarticulate murmurs of admiration, and the languishing postures of their bodies. When the exhibition was finished, the musician advanced, amid the united plaudits of the audience, as if to receive the just tribute of approbation from Arsaces. But he, with a stern look, said to him, 'Friend, I permit thee to play every night before the Syrians; but, if thy lyre is ever heard to sound in the presence of my Scythians, I denounce certain death for the offence.'

"Another time, an officious glutton of our city introduced to him, with great solemnity, two men, whose talents he assured him were unequalled in their different professions. 'The one,' he said, 'adjusted hair with such dexterity, that he could give an artificial beauty to every countenance: and the other possessed such unrivalled skill in cooking a repast, that even the soberest guest was tempted to commit intemperance.' 'My soldiers,' replied Arsaces, 'are

accustomed to adjust their locks with the points of their arrows; nor does our nation consider a bloated paunch and an unwieldy shape, as any accomplishment in warriors; all, therefore, that I can do for these gentlemen, is, to depute one of them to comb my horse's tail, and the other to feed the hogs of the army.'

“After I had conversed some time with this barbarian chief, who heard me with the greatest attention, the hour of refreshment for the army approached, and I was preparing to retire; but the general stopped me with a smile, and told me I had already entertained him with the greatest hospitality, and that therefore it was just that I should stay and taste the Scythian food. A bit of dried flesh, which I afterwards found was that of a horse, some sour coagulated milk, with an infusion of certain herbs, thickened with a coarse kind of flour, were then brought in, and placed upon the ground. I had learned, during my travels in different countries, to discard the false antipathies which so many nations entertain against the diet as well as manners of each other. Whatever is adapted to support life, is proper for the food of man; habit will reconcile us to every kind of food, and he that can accustom himself to be the most easily contented, is happiest, and best prepared for performing the duties of life. I therefore placed myself by the side of Arsaces, and fed, without any visible repugnance, upon a diet which would have excited abhorrence in the minds of all my countrymen. With them it was a work of the greatest importance to settle the formalities of a meal. To contrive a new and poignant sauce, to combine contrary flavours in a

pickle, to stimulate the jaded appetite to new exertions, till reason and every thing human sunk under the undigested mass of food, were reckoned the highest efforts of genius. Even the magistrate did not blush to display a greater knowledge of cookery than of the laws; the debates of the senate itself were often suspended by the fear of losing a repast; and many of our generals prided themselves more upon the arrangement of their tables, than the martial evolutions of their troops.

“After we had eaten some time, Arsaces asked me what I thought of the Scythian method of living. ‘To speak my sentiments,’ said I, ‘it is more formidable to your enemies, than agreeable to your friends.’ He smiled at my sincerity, and I departed; but from this hour he distinguished me with marks of peculiar favour, and admitted me to all his counsels. This envied mark of distinction gave me no other pleasure than as it sometimes enabled me to be useful to my unhappy countrymen, and mitigate the rigour of their conquerors. Indeed, while the great Arsaces lived, his love of justice and order was so great, that even the conquered were safe from all oppression. The peasant pursued his useful labours, unterrified by the march of armies, or unsolicited brought the produce of his fields to a voluntary market. Merchants from all the neighbouring nations crowded to our ports, attracted by the order and justice which were enforced in every part of Arsaces’ dominions: and even the vanquished themselves, defended from oppression and protected in their possessions, considered the success of the Scythians rather as a salutary revolution than as a barbarian conquest.

Such was the pleasing prospect of affairs, when an unexpected disease, the consequence of unremitting exertions, put an end to the glorious life of our conqueror; and with him perished all hopes of safety or happiness to the Syrians. His authority alone was capable of restraining so many needy chieftains, so many victorious barbarians: the spirit of rapine and plunder, so long repressed, began now to spread through all the army. Every officer was an independent tyrant, who ruled with despotic authority, and punished as rebellion the least opposition to his will. The fields were now ravaged, the cities plundered, the industrious peasants driven away like herds of cattle, to labour for the caprice of unfeeling masters, or sold in distant regions as slaves. Now it was that the miserable and harassed Syrians began to find, that the riches which they so much esteemed were but the causes of their ruin, instead of being instrumental to their safety. The poor, accustomed to hardship, have little to fear amid the vicissitudes of life; the brave can always find a refuge in their own valour: but all the bitterness of existence is reserved for those, who have neither courage to defend what they most value, nor fortitude to bear the loss.

“To increase the weight of our misfortunes, new tribes of barbarians, attracted by the success of their countrymen, issued from their deserts, and hastened to share the spoil. But rapine admits not faith or partnership; and it was not long before the vanquished beheld their conquerors animated by implacable rage against each other, and suffering in turn the violence and cruelties they had inflicted.

“At length one of the principal officers of Arsaces,

who is said originally to have descended from the mountains which you inhabit, was raised to empire by the successful efforts of his soldiers. He has already attacked and destroyed all his competitors, and assembled under his banners the remainder of their forces. Tigranes, for thus is he named, possesses all the courage and activity of Arsaces, but he is destitute of his generosity and clemency. His ambition is vast and boundless; he grasps at universal empire, and rejoices to scatter ruin and destruction in his way. He has already subjected all the maritime cities that derive their origin from Greece, together with the fertile plains of Syria. These mountains, inhabited by a bold and hardy race of men, now present a barrier to his enterprising spirit, and I am assured he already meditates the conquest. His soldiers are drawn together from every part; they swarm like ravening wolves along the fields, and nothing can escape their fury. In vain did I think myself safe in the humble obscurity of my cottage, and the reputed favour of the great Arsaces. Yesterday, a lawless band, not contented with destroying my harvest and plundering my little property, seized my daughter and me, and dragged us away in chains. What further injuries, what further insults we might have suffered, it is impossible to determine; since Heaven was pleased to effect our deliverance when we had least reason to expect it."

Such was the history of Chares, which Sophron and his family listened to with fixed attention. When he had finished, the father of Sophron again embraced the venerable stranger, and assured him of all the

safety which their mountains could bestow. "But," added he, "if so imminent a danger is near, it behoves us to consult for the general safety; let us assemble all our friends and neighbours, that they may consider whether life is of more consequence than liberty; and, if they determine to retain that freedom which they have received from their ancestors, by what means it may be best defended."

Sophon then immediately went out, and ascending a neighbouring rock, thus shouted out in a voice which echoed over the neighbouring valleys: "Arm, O ye inhabitants of Lebanon, and instantly meet in council; for a powerful invader is near, and threatens you with death or slavery." This sound was instantly repeated by all who heard it, so that in a short time the intelligence was dispersed to the very confines of the country.

It was not long before a numerous assembly was convened. The aged appeared with all the majestic dignity of wisdom and experience; their countenances, indeed, indicated the ravages of time, but temperance and exercise had preserved them from the loathsome diseases which grow on luxury and indolence. They were attended by their sons in all the pride of youth and vigour, who rushed along in arms, and seemed to breathe deliberate rage and unconquerable opposition. When they were all assembled upon a spacious plain, Sophron rose, and, with a becoming modesty, recited the adventures of the preceding night, and the alarming intelligence he had just received. He had scarcely finished, before a general cry of indignation burst unanimously from the whole

assembly. When it had a little subsided, a venerable old man, whose beard, white as the snow upon the summits of the mountains, reached down to his middle, slowly arose, and leaning upon his staff, spoke thus: "Ninety years have I tended my flocks amid these mountains, and during all that time I have never seen a human being who was bold enough to propose to the inhabitants of Lebanon, that they should fear death more than infamy, or submit to be the vassals of a tyrant." At this a second cry, which seemed to rend the very heavens, was raised, and further deliberation judged unnecessary, except upon the most effectual means of defence. For this purpose, the aged and more experienced retired to a little distance to consult.

They were not long in their deliberations; it was unanimously agreed, that all who were able to bear arms should be embodied, and wait for the approach of the enemy within the boundaries of their own mountains. The nature of the country, always rough, and in many parts inaccessible, would afford them, they thought, sufficient advantages, even against the more numerous and better disciplined troops of the invader; and, by the common consent of all, Sophron was named the general of his country, and invested with supreme authority for its defence.

When these measures had been resolved upon, the assembly dispersed, and Sophron was left alone with Chares. It was then the stranger thus accosted him with a deep sigh: "Did success, O virtuous Sophron, depend entirely upon the justice of the cause, or upon the courage and zeal of its defenders, I should have

little doubt concerning the event of the present contest. For, I can truly say, that, in all the various countries I have visited, my eyes have never seen a more martial race than I have this day beheld assembled: nor can I doubt that their sentiments correspond to their appearance. All, therefore, that can be effected by patience, activity, and dauntless courage, will be achieved by your countrymen in defence of their liberty. But war, unfortunately, is a trade, where long experience frequently confers advantages, which no intrepidity can balance. The troops which are now approaching, have been for years inured to the practice of slaughter; they join to a courage which defies every danger, a knowledge of every fraud and subtlety which can confound or baffle an adversary. In bodily strength, in numbers, your countrymen are superior; even in courage, and the contempt of danger, they are probably not inferior to their enemies: but such are the fatal effects of military skill and discipline, that I dread the event of a combat with such an army, and such a leader."

"Alas!" answered Sophron, "how well do the mature reflections of your wisdom accord with my presaging fears! I know that my countrymen will perform every thing that can be effected by men in their situation; and that thousands will generously sacrifice their lives, rather than abandon the cause they have undertaken to defend: yet, when I consider the superior advantages of our enemies, my fears are no less active than your own. This consolation, however, remains, that I shall either see my country victorious, or avoid the miseries which will attend her ruin."

“Hear me, then,” replied Chares.—“The virtues of your friends, my own obligations to yourself, and the desire I feel to oppose the career of mad ambition, conspire to wrest from me a dreadful secret, which I have hitherto buried in my own bosom, and had determined to conceal from the knowledge of mankind. I have already told you, that much of my life has been dedicated to the acquisition of knowledge, and the investigation of the laws of nature. Not contented with viewing the appearances of things, as they strike our senses, I have endeavoured to penetrate into the deeper recesses of nature, and to discover those secrets which are concealed from the greater part of mankind. For this purpose, I have tried innumerable experiments concerning the manner in which bodies act upon each other; I have submitted the plants, the stones, the minerals, which surround us, to the violence of all-consuming fire; I have examined their structure, and the different principles which compose them, with the patient labour and perseverance of a long life. In the course of these enquiries, I have made many curious and important discoveries, but one above the rest, which I will now impart, under the promise of eternal and inviolable secrecy. Know, then, that I have found out an easy and expeditious combination of common materials, the effect of which is equal or superior to the most potent and destructive agents in nature. Neither the proudest city can maintain its walls, nor the strongest castle its bulwarks, against the irresistible attacks of this extraordinary composition. Increase but the quantity, and the very rocks and

Mountains will be torn asunder, with a violence that equals that of earthquakes. Whole armies, proud of their triumphs, may be in an instant scattered and destroyed, like the summer's dust before the whirlwind; and, what increases the prodigy, a single man may securely give death to thousands.—This composition I have hitherto concealed, in pity to the miseries of mankind; but, since there appears no other method of preserving the virtuous inhabitants of these mountains from slavery and ruin, I am determined to employ it in their defence. Give orders, therefore, that a certain number of your countrymen provide me with the ingredients that I shall indicate, and expect the amplest success from your own valour, assisted by such powerful auxiliaries.”

Sophon said every thing to Chares which such an unexpected mark of confidence deserved, and instantly received his orders, and prepared to execute them with the greatest alacrity. Chares, meanwhile, was indefatigable in the execution of his project, and it was not long before he had prepared a sufficient quantity to provide for the common defence. Tigranes now approached, with the rage and confidence of a lion that invades a flock of domestic animals. He had long forgotten all the ties which attach men to the place of their birth, and neither time nor distance had been able to extinguish the hatred he had conceived to Sophron. Scarcely did he deign to send an ambassador before his army. He, however, dispatched one with an imperious message, requiring all the inhabitants of Lebanon to submit to his victorious arms, or threatening them with the worst

extremities of war. When the ambassador returned, and reported the fixed determination of Sophron and his countrymen, he was inflamed with rage, and ordered his army to advance to the attack. They marched without opposition till they entered the mountainous districts, where all the bravest inhabitants were ranged in arms to meet the invader. Then arose the noise of war and the clang of arms; then man encountered man, and wounds and death were seen on every side. The troops of Tigranes advanced in close array, with long protended spears; the inhabitants of Lebanon were lighter armed, and, with invincible courage, endeavoured to break the formidable battalion of their enemies. They rushed with fury upon the dreadful range of weapons, and, even wounded and dying, endeavoured to beat down their points, and open a way to their companions. Sophron was seen conspicuous in every part of the field, encouraging his companions with his voice, and more by his actions. Wherever he turned his steps, he was followed by the bravest youth of his party, and there the efforts and the slaughter were always greatest. Five times, covered with blood and dust, he made a desperate charge upon the troops of Tigranes, and five times did he force his bravest soldiers to give ground. At length, the superiority of discipline and experience, began to prevail over the generous, but more unequal efforts of the defenders. The veterans of Tigranes perceived their advantage, and pressed the enemy with redoubled vigour. This was the decisive moment which Chares had foreseen and provided for: in an instant the bands of Lebanon

retreat by the orders of Sophron, with a precipitation bordering upon flight. Tigranes, supposing himself certain of victory, orders his troops to advance and decide the fortune of the battle; but, while they are rashly preparing to obey, a sudden noise is heard, that equals the loudest thunders; the earth itself trembles with a convulsive motion under their feet; then bursts asunder with a violence that nothing can resist. Hundreds are in an instant swallowed up, or dashed against rocks, and miserably destroyed. Meanwhile, all nature seems to be convulsed around; the rocks themselves are torn from their solid base, and with their enormous fragments crush whole bands of miserable wretches beneath. Clouds of smoke obscure the field of battle, and veil the combatants in a dreadful shade; which is, from time to time, dispelled by flashes of destructive fire. Such a succession of horrors daunted even the most brave: scarcely could the troops of Lebanon, who had been prepared to expect some extraordinary interposition, maintain their post, or behold the spectacle of their enemy's ruin; but the bands of Tigranes were struck with the wildest consternation, and fled with trembling steps over the field. And now these prodigies were succeeded by an awful interval of quiet; the peals of bursting thunder were no longer heard, the lightnings ceased to flash, the mists that darkened the scene were rolled away, and discovered the various fortunes of the fight. Then the voice of Sophron was heard, exhorting his companions to pursue the fugitives and complete their victory. They rushed forwards like angry lions to the chase; but all re-

sistance was at an end; and Sophron, who now perceived that the enemy was irretrievably broken, checked the ardour of his men, and entreated them to spare the vanquished. They obeyed his voice, and, after having chased them beyond the utmost boundaries of Lebanon, returned in triumph, amid the praises and acclamations of their joyful families, whom they had preserved from slavery by their valour. They then examined the field of battle, and, collecting all who had any remains of life, they treated them with the greatest humanity, binding up their wounds, and administering to all their necessities. Among the thickest dead was found the breathless body of Tigranes, miserably shattered and disfigured, but still exhibiting evident marks of passion and ferocity. Sophron could not behold, without compassion, the friend of his early years, and the companion of his youthful sports. "Unhappy man!" said he, "thou hast, at length, paid the price of thy ungovernable ambition! How much better would it have been to have tended thy flocks upon the mountains, than to have blazed an angry meteor, and set for ever amid the curses of thy country!" He then covered the body with a military vest, and ordered it to be honourably burned, upon a mighty funeral pile which was prepared for all the dead.

The next day, an immense quantity of spoil was collected, that had been abandoned by the troops of Tigranes in their flight. The simple inhabitants of Lebanon, the greater part of whom had never been beyond the limits of their mountains, were astonished at such a display of luxury and magnificence. Al-

ready the secret poison of sensuality and avarice began to inflame their hearts, as they gazed on costly hangings, enriched with gold and silver, on Persian carpets, and drinking-vessels of the most exquisite workmanship. Already had they begun to differ about the division of these splendid trifles, when Sophron, who marked the growing mischief, and remembered the fatal effects which Chares had described in his travels, rose, and proposed to his countrymen, that the arms of their conquered enemies should be carefully preserved for the public defence, but that all the rest of the spoil should be consumed upon the funeral pile prepared for the dead, lest the simplicity of the inhabitants of Lebanon should be corrupted, and the happy equality and union which had hitherto prevailed among them interrupted. This proposal was instantly applauded by all the older and wiser part of the assembly, who rejoiced in seeing the evils averted which they had so much reason to apprehend: nor did those of a different character dare to express their sentiments, or attempt any open opposition.

From this time, Sophron was universally honoured by all as the most virtuous and valiant of his nation. He passed the rest of his life in peace and tranquillity, contented with the exercise of the same rural employments which had engaged his childhood. Chares, whose virtues and knowledge were equally admirable, was presented, at the public expence, with a small but fertile tract of land, sufficient to supply him with all the comforts of life; this the grateful inhabitants of the mountains continually cultivate for him,

as a memorial of the signal assistance he had afforded them; and here, contented with the enjoyment of security and freedom, he passed the remaining part of his life in the contemplation of nature, and the delightful intercourse of virtuous friendship.

When Miss Simmons had finished, Tommy expressed his astonishment at the latter part of the story. "Is it possible," said he, "there can be any thing of so extraordinary a nature as to burst the very rocks asunder, and destroy an army at once?"

"Have you, then, never heard the explosion of a gun, or are you ignorant of the destructive effects of the powder with which they charge it?" said Mr. Barlow.

TOMMY.

Yes, Sir; but that is nothing to what Chares did in the story.

MR. BARLOW.

That is only because it is used in very inconsiderable portions; but, were you to increase the quantity, it would be capable of effecting every thing which you heard Miss Simmons describe. When nations are at war with each other, it is now universally the agent of destruction. They have large tubes of iron, called cannons, into which they ram a considerable quantity of powder, together with a large iron ball, as big as you are able to lift. They then set fire to the powder, which explodes with so much violence, that the ball flies out, and destroys, not only every living thing it meets with, but even demolishes the strongest walls that can be raised. Sometimes it is

buried in considerable quantities in the earth, and then they contrive to inflame it, and to escape in time. When the fire communicates with the mass, it is all inflamed in an instant, and produces the horrible effects you have heard described. As such are the irresistible effects of gunpowder, it is no wonder that even a victorious army should be stopped in their progress by such a dreadful and unexpected event.

TOMMY.

That is true, indeed; and I declare Chares was a very good and sensible man. Had it not been for him, these brave inhabitants of Lebanon must have been enslaved. I now plainly perceive, that a man may be of much more consequence by improving his mind in various kinds of knowledge, even though he is poor, than by all the finery and magnificence he can acquire. I wish, with all my heart, that Mr. Barlow had been so good as to read this story to the young gentlemen and ladies that were lately here. I think it would have made a great impression upon their minds, and would have prevented their feeling so much contempt for poor Harry, who is better and wiser than them all, though he does not powder his hair, or dress so genteelly.

“Tommy,” said Mr. Merton, with a kind of contemptuous smile, “why should you believe that the hearing of a single story would change the characters of all your late friends, when neither the good instructions you have so long received from Mr. Barlow, nor the intimacy you have had with Harry, were sufficient to restrain your impetuous temper, or

prevent you from treating him in the shameful manner you have done?"

Tommy appeared very much abashed with his father's rebuke; he hung down his head in silence a considerable time: at length he faintly said, "Oh, Sir! I have, indeed, acted very ill: I have rendered myself unworthy of the affection of all my best friends. But do not, pray do not give me up entirely; you shall see how I will behave for the future; and, if ever I am guilty of the same faults again, I consent that you should abandon me for ever." Saying this, he silently stole out of the room, as if intent upon some extraordinary resolution. His father observed his motions, and, smiling, said to Mr. Barlow, "What can this portend? This boy is as changeable as a weathercock. Every blast whirls him round and round upon his centre, nor will he ever fix, I fear, in any direction." "At least," said Mr. Barlow, "you have the greatest reason to rejoice in his present impressions, which are good and estimable. And, I fear, it is the lot of most human beings to exhaust almost every species of error, before they fix in truth and virtue."

Tommy now entered the room, but with a remarkable change in his dress and manner. He had combed the powder out of his hair, and demolished the elegance of his curls: he had divested his dress of every appearance of finery, and even his massy and ponderous buckles, so long the delight of his heart, and the wonder of his female friends, were taken from his shoes, and replaced by a pair of the plainest form and appearance. In this habiliment he appeared so totally

changed from what he was, that even his mother, who had lately become a little sparing of her observations, could not help exclaiming, "What, in the name of wonder, has the boy been doing now? Why, Tommy, I protest you have made yourself a perfect fright, and you look more like a plough-boy than a young gentleman!"

"Mamma," answered Tommy, gravely, "I am only now what I ought always to have been. Had I been contented with this dress before, I never should have imitated such a parcel of coxcombs as you have lately had at your house; nor pretended to admire Miss Matilda's music, which, I own, tired me as much as Harry, and had almost set me asleep; nor should I have exposed myself at the play and the ball; and, what is worst of all, I should have avoided all my shameful behaviour to Harry at the bull-baiting. But from this time, I shall apply myself to the study of nothing but reason and philosophy; and therefore I have bid adieu to dress and finery for ever."

It was with great difficulty that the gentlemen could refrain from laughing at Tommy's harangue, delivered with infinite seriousness and solemnity; they however concealed their emotions, and encouraged him to persevere in such a laudable resolution. But, as the night was now pretty far advanced, the whole family retired to bed.

The next morning, early, Tommy arose, and dressed himself with his newly-adopted simplicity; and, as soon as breakfast was over, entreated Mr. Barlow to accompany him to Harry Sandford's. But he did not forget to take with him the lamb, which he had

caressed and fed with constant assiduity ever since he had so valiantly rescued him from his devouring enemy. As they approached the house, the first object which Tommy distinguished was his little friend at some distance, who was driving his father's sheep along the common. At this sight, his impetuosity could no longer be restrained, and, springing forward with all his speed, he arrived in an instant, panting, and out of breath, and incapable of speaking. Harry, who knew his friend, and plainly perceived the dispositions with which he approached, met him with open arms: so that reconciliation was begun and completed in a moment; and Mr. Barlow, who now arrived with the lamb, had the pleasure of seeing his little pupils mutually giving and receiving every unaffected mark of the warmest affection.

"Harry," said Mr. Barlow, "I bring you a little friend, who is sincerely penitent for his offences, and comes to own the faults he has committed. "That I am, indeed," said Tommy, a little recovered, and able to speak. "But I have behaved so ill, and have been such an ungrateful fellow, that I am afraid Harry will never be able to forgive me."

"Indeed, indeed," said Harry, "there you do me the greatest injustice; for I have already forgotten every thing but your former kindness and affection." "And I," answered Tommy, "will never forget how ill, how ungratefully I have used you, nor the goodness with which you now receive me." Tommy then recollected his lamb, and presented it to his friend; while Mr. Barlow told him the story of its rescue, and the heroism exerted in its defence. Harry

seemed to receive equal pleasure from the restoration of his favourite, and the affection Tommy had shown in its preservation; and, taking him by the hand, he led him into a small but neat and convenient house, where he was most cordially welcomed by Harry's family. In a corner of the chimney sat the honest black, who had performed so signal a service at the bull-baiting. "Alas!" said Tommy, "there is another instance of my negligence and ingratitude. I now see that one fault brings on another without end." Then, advancing to the black, he took him kindly by the hand, and thanked him for the preservation of his life. "Little master," replied he, "you are extremely welcome to all I have done. I would at any time risk my own safety to preserve one of my fellow-creatures; and, if I have been of any use, I have been amply repaid by the kindness of this little boy, your friend, and all his worthy family."

"That is not enough," said Tommy, "and you shall soon find what it is to oblige a person like— (here a stroke of presumption was just coming out of Tommy's mouth, but, recollecting himself, he added,) "a person like my father."

And now he addressed himself to Harry's mother, a venerable, decent woman, of a middle age, and his two sisters, plain, modest, healthy-looking girls, a little older than their brother. All these he treated with so much cordiality and attention, that all the company were delighted with him; so easy is it for those who possess rank and fortune to gain the goodwill of their fellow-creatures; and so inexcusable is

that surly pride which renders many of them deservedly odious.

When dinner was ready, he sat down with the rest; and as it was the custom here for every body to wait upon himself, Tommy insisted upon their suffering him to conform to the established method. The victuals were not indeed very delicate, but the food was wholesome, clean, and served up hot to table; an advantage which is not always found in elegant apartments. Tommy ate with considerable appetite, and seemed to enjoy his new situation as much as if he had never experienced any other. After the dinner was removed, he thought he might with propriety gratify the curiosity he felt to converse with the black upon fighting bulls; for nothing had more astonished him than the account he had heard of his courage, and the ease with which he had subdued so terrible an animal. "My friend," said he, "I suppose in your own country, you have been very much used to bull-baitings; otherwise you never would have dared to encounter such a fierce creature; I must confess, though I can tame most animals, I never was more frightened in my life, than when I saw him break loose; and, without your assistance, I do not know what would have become of me."

"Master," replied the black, "it is not in my own country, that I have learned to manage these animals. There, I have been accustomed to several kinds of hunting much more dangerous than this; and, considering how much you white people despise us blacks, I own I was very much surprised to see so

many hundreds of you running away from such an insignificant enemy as a poor tame bull."

Tommy blushed a little at the remembrance of the prejudices he had formerly entertained, concerning blacks and his own superiority; but not choosing now to enter upon the subject, he asked the man where then he had acquired so much dexterity in taming them.

"I will tell you, master," replied the black. "When I lived a slave among the Spaniards at Buenos Ayres, it used to be a common employment of the people to go into the woods and hunt cattle down for their subsistence. The hunter mounts his fleetest horse, and takes with him a strong cord of a considerable length: when he sees one of the wild kine, which he destines for his prey, he pursues it at full speed, and never fails to overtake it by the superior swiftness of his horse. While he is thus employed, he holds the cord ready; at the end of which a sliding noose is formed; and when he is at a convenient distance, throws it from him with such a certain hand, that the beast is entangled by one of his legs, after which it is impossible for him to escape.

"That you may form a clearer idea of what a man is capable of executing, with courage and address, I will relate a most extraordinary incident to which I was witness, during my residence in that part of the world. A certain man, a native of the country, had committed some offence, for which he was condemned to labour several years in the galleys. He found means to speak to the governor of the town, and besought him to change the nature of his punish-

ment. 'I have been brought up,' said he, 'a warrior, and fear dishonour, but not death. Instead of consuming my strength and spirits in such an ignominious employment, let me have an opportunity of achieving something worthy to be beheld, or of perishing like a brave man in the attempt. In a few days a solemn feast is to be celebrated, at which you will not fail to be present, attended by all your people. I will there, in the presence of the whole city, encounter the fiercest bull you can procure. I desire no assistance but my horse, no weapons but this cord; yet, thus prepared, I will meet his fury, and take him by the head, the horns, the feet, as you shall direct. I will then throw him down, bridle him, saddle him, and vault upon his back; in this situation, you shall turn out two more of the fiercest bulls you can find, and I will attack them both, and put them all to death with my dagger, the instant you shall command.' The governor consented to this brave man's request, more from curiosity to see so extraordinary a spectacle, than from the opinion it would be attended with success. When the appointed day arrived, the inhabitants of all the city assembled and took their seats in a vast building which surrounded a considerable open space, destined for this amazing combat. The brave American then appeared, alone, on horseback, armed with nothing but his cord; and, after riding round the place, and saluting the company, he waited intrepidly for his enemy. Presently an enormous bull was let loose, who, as soon as he beheld the man, attacked him with all his fury. The American avoided his shock with infinite dexterity,

and galloped round the bull, who, in his turn, betook himself to flight. The valiant horseman pursued his flying enemy, and, while he was thus engaged, desired the governor to direct where he would have him seized. He replied, it was a matter of indifference to him; and the American instantly throwing his noose, which he held ready all the time, caught the bull in his flight by one of his hinder legs: then galloping two or three times round the animal, he so enveloped him in the snare, that, after a few violent efforts to disengage himself, he fell to the earth. He then leaped lightly from his horse, and the animal, who had been perfectly trained up to this kind of combat, stood still and kept the cord extended; while his master advanced to the bull, and put him to death in an instant, by stabbing him with his dagger behind the horns. All the assembly uttered a shout of admiration; but the conqueror told them that what they had seen was nothing, and, disentangling his cord from the slaughtered beast, he composedly mounted his horse, and waited for a new and more formidable enemy. Presently, the gate of the torillo was opened, and a bull, much more furious than the last, rushed out, which he was ordered to bridle and saddle, according to his engagement."

"I protest," said Tommy, "this is the most wonderful story I ever heard. I do not believe all the fine gentlemen I have ever seen, put together, would dare to attack such a bull."

"Master," replied the black, "the talents of mankind are various, and nature has, in every country,

furnished the human species with all the qualities necessary for their preservation. In this country, and many others which I have seen, there are thousands who live like birds in cages, upon the food provided by others, without doing any thing for themselves. But they should be contented with the happiness they enjoy, if such a life can be called happiness, and not despise their fellow-creatures, without whose continual assistance they could not exist an instant."

"Very true," indeed, answered Tommy. "You seem to me a very honest, sensible man, though a negro; and, since I have given myself up to the improvement of my mind, I entertain the same opinions. But, let us hear how this brave man succeeded in his next attempt."

"When the champion perceived this second enemy approach, he waited for him with the same intrepidity he had discovered before, and avoided his formidable shock by making his horse wheel nimbly round the bull. When he had thus baffled his fury, and put his enemy to flight, he chased him some time as he had done the former, till he drove him near to the middle of the enclosed space, where a strong post had been firmly fixed into the ground. As soon as he approached the spot, he threw the unerring noose, and, catching the bull by the horns, entangled him as he had done before, and dragged him with some difficulty to the stake. To this he bound him down so closely, that it became impossible for the creature either to resist or stir. Leaping then from his horse, who remained immoveable as before, he took a sad-

dle, which had been left there on purpose, and girded it firmly on the back of the bull; through his nostrils he thrust an iron ring, to which was fixed a cord, which he brought over his neck as a bridle; and then, arming his hand with a short pike, he nimbly vaulted upon the back of this new and terrible courser.

“The creature all this time did not cease to bellow with every expression of rage, which had not the least effect upon the mind of this valiant man. On the contrary, coolly taking a knife, he cut the cord which bound him to the stake, and restored him to perfect liberty. The creature thus disengaged, exerted every effort of strength and fury to throw his rider, who kept his seat undaunted, in spite of all his violent agitations. The gates of the torillo were then thrown open, and two other furious bulls rushed out, and seemed ready to attack the man; but, at the instant they perceived the manner in which he was mounted, their rage gave way to terror, and they fled precipitately away. The other bull followed his companions, and bore his rider several times round the amphitheatre in this extraordinary chase. This spectacle had already lasted some time, to the admiration of all present, when the governor ordered the man to complete the business by putting all the bulls to death. He, instantly drawing his knife, plunged it behind the horns of the bull on which he rode, who immediately dropped down dead, while the conqueror, disengaging himself as he fell, stood upright by the slaughtered animal. He then mounted his horse again, who had been placed in safety at some little distance, and pursuing the chase as before, with his

fatal noose, dispatched both the surviving animals without the least difficulty."

Tommy expressed the greatest admiration at this recital; and now, as the evening began to advance, Mr. Barlow invited him to return. But Tommy, instead of complying, took him by the hand, thanked him for all his kindness and attention, but declared his resolution of staying some time with his friend Harry. "The more I consider my own behaviour," said he, "the more I feel myself ashamed of my folly and ingratitude. But you have taught me, my dear Sir, that all I have in my power is to acknowledge them, which I most willingly do before all this good family, and entreat Harry to think that the impressions I now feel are such as I shall never forget." Harry embraced his friend, and assured him once more of his being perfectly reconciled; and all the family stood mute with admiration at the condescension of the young gentleman, who was not ashamed of acknowledging his faults event to his inferiors.

Mr. Barlow approved of Tommy's design, and took upon him to answer for the consent of Mr. Merton to his staying some time with Harry; then taking his leave of all the company, he departed.

But Tommy began now to enter upon a course of life which was very little consistent with his former habits. He supped with great cheerfulness, and even found himself happy with the rustic fare which was set before him, accompanied as it was with unaffected civility, and a hearty welcome. He went to bed early, and slept very sound all night; however, when Harry came to call him the next morning at five, as

he had made him promise to do, he found a considerable difficulty in rousing himself at the summons. Conscious pride, however, and the newly-acquired dignity of his character, supported him; he recollected that he should disgrace himself in the eyes of his father, of Mr. Barlow, and of all the family, with which he now was, if he appeared incapable of acting up to his own declarations: he therefore made a noble effort, leaped out of bed, dressed himself, and followed Harry. Not contented with this, he accompanied him in all his rustic employments, and, as no kind of country exercise was entirely new to him since his residence with Mr. Barlow, he acquitted himself with a degree of dexterity which gained him new commendations.

Thus did he pass the first day of his visit, with some little difficulty indeed, but without deviating from his resolution. The second, he found his change of life infinitely more tolerable; and in a very little space of time, he was almost reconciled to his new situation. The additional exercise he used improved his health and strength, and added so considerably to his appetite, that he began to think the table of farmer Sandford exceeded all he had ever tried before.

By thus practising the common useful occupations of life, he began to feel a more tender interest in the common concerns of his fellow-creatures. He now found, from his own experience, that Mr. Barlow had not deceived him in the various representations he had made of the utility of the lower classes, and consequently of the humanity which is due to them when

they discharge their duty. Nor did that gentleman abandon his little friend in this important trial. He visited him frequently, pointed out every thing that was curious or interesting about the farm, and encouraged him to persevere by his praises. "You are now," said Mr. Barlow, one day, "beginning to practise those virtues which have rendered the great men of other times so justly famous. It is not by sloth, nor finery, nor the mean indulgence of our appetites, that greatness of character, or even reputation, is to be acquired. He that would excel others in virtue or knowledge, must first excel them in temperance and application. You cannot imagine that men fit to command an army, or to give laws to a state, were ever formed by an idle and effeminate education. When the Roman people, oppressed by their enemies, were looking out for a leader able to defend them, and change the fortune of the war, where did they seek for this extraordinary man? It was neither at banquets, nor in splendid palaces, nor amid the gay, the elegant, or the dissipated; they turned their steps towards a poor and solitary cottage, such as the meanest of your late companions would consider with contempt; there they found Cincinnatus, whose virtues and abilities were allowed to excel all the rest of his citizens, turning up the soil with a pair of oxen, and holding the plough himself. This great man had been inured to arms and the management of public affairs, even from his infancy; he had repeatedly led the Roman legions to victory; yet in in the hour of peace, or when his country did not

require his services, he deemed no employment more honourable than to labour for his own subsistence.

“What would all your late friends have said, to see the greatest men in England, and the bravest officers of the army, crowding round the house of one of those obscure farmers you have been accustomed to despise, and entreating him, in the most respectful language, to leave his fields, and accept of the highest dignity in the government or army? Yet this was actually the state of things at Rome; and it was characters like these, with all the train of severe and rugged virtues, that elevated that people above all the other nations of the world. And tell me, my little friend, since chance, not merit, too frequently allots the situation in which men are to act, had you rather, in a high station, appear to all mankind unworthy of the advantages you enjoy, or, in a low one, seem equal to the most exalted employments by your virtues and abilities?”

Such were the conversations which Mr. Barlow frequently held with Tommy, and which never failed to inspire him with new resolution to persevere. Nor could he help being frequently affected by the comparison of Harry's behaviour with his own. No cloud seemed ever to shade the features of his friend, or alter the uniform sweetness of his temper. Even the repeated provocations he had received were either totally obliterated, or had made no disagreeable impressions. After discharging the necessary duties of the day, he gave up the rest of his time to the amusement of Tommy, with so much zeal and affection,

that he could not avoid loving him a thousand times better than before.

During the evening, he frequently conversed with the honest negro concerning the most remarkable circumstances of the country where he was born. One night, when he seemed peculiarly inquisitive, the black gave him the following account of himself.

“I was born,” said he, “in the neighbourhood of the river Gambia in Africa. In this country, people are astonished at my colour, and start at the sight of a black man, as if he did not belong to their species: but there, every body resembles me; and when the first white men landed upon our coast, we were as much surprised with their appearance as you can be with ours. In some parts of the world I have seen men of a yellow hue, in others of a copper-colour; and all have the foolish vanity to despise their fellow-creatures, as infinitely inferior to themselves. There, indeed, they entertain these conceits from ignorance; but in this country, where the natives pretend to superior reason, I have often wondered they could be influenced by such a prejudice. Is a black horse thought to be inferior to a white one, in speed, or strength, or courage? Is a white cow thought to give more milk, or a white dog to have a more acute scent in pursuing the game? On the contrary, I have generally found, in almost every country, that a pale colour in animals is considered as a mark of weakness and inferiority. Why then should a certain race of men imagine themselves superior to the rest, for the very circumstance they despise in other animals?”

“But in the country where I was born, it is not only man that differs from what we see here, but every other circumstance. Here, for a considerable part of the year, you are chilled by frosts and snows, and scarcely behold the presence of the sun during that gloomy season that is called the winter. With us the sun is always present, pouring out light and heat, and scorching us with his fiercest beams. In my country we know no difference in the lengths of nights and days: all are of equal length throughout the year, and present not that continual variety which you see here. We have neither ice, nor frost, nor snow; the trees never lose their leaves, and we have fruits in every season of the year. During several months, indeed, we are scorched by unremitting heats, which parch the ground, dry up the rivers, and afflict both men and animals with intolerable thirst. In that season, you may behold lions, tigers, elephants, and a variety of other ferocious animals, driven from their dark abodes in the midst of impenetrable forests, down to the lower grounds and the sides of rivers. Every night we hear their savage yells, their cries of rage, and think ourselves scarcely safe in our cottages. In this country you have reduced all other animals to subjection, and have nothing to fear except from each other. You even shelter yourselves from the injuries of the weather, in mansions that seem calculated to last for ever, in impenetrable houses of brick or stone, that would have scarcely any thing to fear from the whole animal creation; but, with us, a few reeds twisted together, and perhaps daubed over with slime or mud, compose the whole of our dwellings.

Yet there the innocent negro would sleep as happy and contented as you do in your palaces, provided you did not drag him by fraud and violence away, and force him to endure all the excesses of your cruelty.

“It was in one of these cottages that I first remember any thing of myself. A few stakes set in the ground, and interwoven with dry reeds, covered at top with the spreading leaves of the palm, composed our dwelling. Our furniture consisted of three or four earthen pipkins, in which our food was dressed; a few mats woven with a silky kind of grass, to serve as beds; the instruments with which my mother turned the ground, and the javelin, arrows, and lines, which my father used in fishing or the chase. In this country, and many others, where I have been, I observe that nobody thinks himself happy till he has got together a thousand things which he does not want, and can never use; you live in houses so big, that they are fit to contain an army; you cover yourselves with superfluous clothes, which restrain all the motions of your bodies: when you want to eat, you must have meat enough served up to nourish a whole village; yet I have seen poor famished wretches starving at your gate, while the master had before him at least an hundred times as much as he could consume. We negroes, whom you treat as savages, have different manners and different opinions. The first thing that I can remember of myself, was the running naked about such a cottage as I have described, with four of my little brothers and sisters. I have observed your children here with astonishment:

as soon as they are born, it seems to be the business of all about them, to render them weak, helpless, and unable to use any of their limbs. The little negro, on the contrary, is scarcely born before he learns to crawl about upon the ground. Unrestrained by bandages or ligatures, he comes as soon and as easily to the perfect use of all his organs, as any of the beasts which surround him. Before your children here are taught to venture themselves upon their feet, he has the perfect use of his, and can follow his mother in her daily labours.

“ This I remember was my own case. Sometimes I used to go with my mother to the field, where all the women of the village were assembled to plant rice for their subsistence. The joyful songs which they used to sing, amid their toils, delighted my infant ear; and, when their daily task was done, they danced together under the shade of spreading palms. In this manner did they raise the simple food, which was sufficient for themselves and their children; yams, a root resembling your potatoe, Indian corn, and, above all, rice: to this were added the fruits which nature spontaneously produced in our woods, and the produce of the chase and fishing. Yet with this we are as much contented as you are with all your splendid tables, and enjoy a greater share of health and strength. As soon as the fiery heat of the sun declined, you might behold the master of every cottage reposing before his own door, and feasting upon his mess of roots or fruits, with all his family around. If a traveller or stranger happened to come from a distant country, he was welcome to enter into every house, and share the provisions of the family. No door was

barred against his entrance, no surly servant insulted him for his poverty; he entered wherever he pleased, sat himself down with the family, and then pursued his journey, or reposed himself in quiet till the next morning. In each of our towns there is generally a large building, where the elder part of the society are accustomed to meet in the shade of the evening, and converse upon a variety of subjects; the young and vigorous divert themselves with dances and other pastimes, and the children of different ages amuse themselves with a thousand sports and gambols adapted to their age: some aim their little arrows at marks, or dart their light and blunted javelins at each other, to form themselves for the exercises of war and the chase; others wrestle naked upon the sand, or run in sportive races, with a degree of activity which I have never seen among the Europeans, who pretend to be our masters.

“I have described to you the building of our houses; simple as they are, they answer every purpose of human life, and every man is his own architect. A hundred or two of these edifices compose our towns, which are generally surrounded by lofty hedges of thorns, to secure us from the midnight attacks of wild beasts, with only a single entrance, which is carefully closed at night.”

“You talk,” said Tommy, “of wild beasts; pray have you many of them in your country?” “Yes, master,” said the black, “we have them of many sorts, equally dreadful and ferocious. First, we have the lion, which I dare say you have heard of, and perhaps seen. He is bigger than the largest mastiff, and infinitely stronger and more fierce; his paws

alone are such, that with a single blow he is able to knock down a man, and almost every other animal; but these paws are armed with claws so sharp and dreadful, that nothing can resist their violence.] When he roars, every beast of the forest betakes himself to flight, and even the boldest hunter can scarcely hear it without dismay. Sometimes, the most valiant of our youth assemble in bands, arm themselves with arrows and javelins, and go to the chase of these destructive animals. When they have found his retreat, they generally make a circle round, uttering shouts and cries, and clashing their arms, to rouse him to resistance. The lion, meanwhile, looks round upon his assailants with indifference or contempt; neither their number, nor their horrid shouts, nor the glitter of their radiant arms, can daunt him for an instant. At length he begins to lash his sides with his long and nervous tail, a certain sign of rising rage; his eyes sparkle with destructive fires; and, if the number of the hunters is very great, he perhaps moves slowly on. But this he is not permitted to do; a javelin, thrown at him from behind, wounds him in the flank, and compels him to turn. Then you behold him roused to fury and desperation; neither wounds, nor streaming blood, nor a triple row of barbed spears, can prevent him from springing upon the daring black who has wounded him. Should he reach him, in the attack, it is certain death; but generally the hunter, who is at once contending for glory and his own life, and is inured to danger, avoids him by a nimble leap, and all his companions hasten to his assistance. Thus is the lion pressed and wounded on every side, his rage

is ineffectual, and only exhausts his strength the faster; a hundred wounds are pouring out his blood at once, and at length he bites the ground in the agonies of death, and yields the victory, though unconquered.

“When he is dead, he is carried back in triumph by the hunters, as a trophy of their courage. All the village rushes out at once; the young, the old, women and children, uttering joyful shouts, and praising the valour of their champions. The elders admire his prodigious size, his mighty limbs, his dreadful fangs, and perhaps repeat tales of their own exploits; the women seem to tremble at their fierce enemy, even in his death; while the men compel their children to approach the monster, and tinge their little weapons in his blood. All utter joyful exclamations, and feasts are made in every house, to which the victors are invited as the principal guests. These are intended at once to reward those who have performed so gallant an achievement, and to encourage a spirit of enterprise in the rest of the nation.”

“What a dreadful kind of hunting must this be!” said Tommy. “But, I suppose, if any one meets a lion alone, it is impossible to resist him.” “Not always,” answered the black: “I will tell you what I once was witness to myself. My father was reckoned not only the most skilful hunter, but one of the bravest of our tribe: innumerable are the wild beasts which have fallen beneath his arm. One evening, when the inhabitants of the whole village were assembled at their sports and dances, a monstrous lion, allured, I suppose, by the smell of human flesh,

burst unexpectedly upon them, without warning them of his approach, by roaring, as he commonly does. As they were unarmed, and unprepared for defence, all but my father instantly fled, trembling, to their huts; but he, who had never yet turned his back upon any beast of the forest, drew from his side a kind of knife, or dagger, which he constantly wore, and, placing one knee and one hand upon the ground, waited the approach of his terrible foe. The lion instantly rushed upon him with a fury not to be described; but my father received him upon the point of his weapon, with so steady and so composed an aim, that he buried it several inches in his belly. The beast attacked him a second time, and a second time received a dreadful wound, not however without laying bare one of my father's sides with a sudden stroke of his claws. The rest of the village then rushed in, and soon dispatched the lion with innumerable wounds.

“This exploit appeared so extraordinary, that it spread my father's fame throughout the whole country, and gained him the name of *the undaunted hunter*, as an honourable distinction, from the neighbourhood.—Under such a parent, it was not long before I was taught every species of the chase. At first, my father only suffered me to pursue stags and other feeble animals, or took me in his canoe to fish. Soon, however, I was entrusted with a bow and arrows, and placed with many other children and young men to defend our rice-fields from the depredations of the river-horse. Rice, it is necessary to observe, is a plant that requires great moisture in the soil; all our

plantations, therefore, are made by the side of rivers, in the soft fertile soil which is overflowed in the rainy season. But when the grain is almost ripe, we are forced to defend it from a variety of hurtful animals, that would otherwise deprive us of the fruits of our labours; among these, one of the principal is the animal I have mentioned. His size and bulk are immense, being twice the bigness of the largest ox which I have seen in this country. He has four legs, which are short and thick, a head of a monstrous magnitude, and jaws that are armed with teeth of a prodigious size and strength; besides two prominent tusks, which threaten destruction to all assailants.

“But this animal, though so large and strong, is chiefly an inhabitant of the river, where he lives upon fish and water-roots. It is sometimes a curious but a dreadful sight, when a boat is gliding over a smooth part of the stream, of unusual depth and clearness, to look down and behold this monstrous creature travelling along the bottom several yards below the surface. Whenever this happens, the boatman instantly paddles another way; for such is the strength of the creature, that he is able to upset a bark of moderate size, by rising under it, or to tear out a plank with his fangs, and expose those who are in it to the dangers of an unexpected shipwreck. All the day he chiefly hides himself in the water, and preys upon fish; but, during the gloom of night, he issues from the river, and invades the fields of standing corn, which he would soon lay desolate, were he not driven back by the shouts and cries of those who are stationed to defend them. At this work I had assisted several

successive nights, till we were almost wearied with watching. At length, one of the most enterprising of our young men proposed, that we should no longer content ourselves with driving back the enemy, but boldly attack him, and punish him for his temerity. With this purpose, we concealed ourselves in a convenient spot, till we had seen one of the river-horses issue from the water, and advance a considerable way into our plantations: then we rushed from our hiding-place with furious shouts and cries, and endeavoured to intercept his return: but the beast, confiding in his superior strength, advanced slowly on, snarling horribly, and gnashing his dreadful tusks; and in this manner he opened his way through the thickest of our battalions. In vain we poured upon him on every side our darts and arrows, and every missive weapon; so well defended was he in an impenetrable hide, that every weapon either rebounded as from a wall, or glanced aside without in the least annoying. At length, one of the boldest of our youth advanced unguardedly upon him, and endeavoured to wound him from a shorter distance; but the furious beast, rushing upon him with an unexpected degree of swiftness, ripped up his body with a single stroke of his enormous tusk, and then, seizing him in his furious jaws, lifted up his mangled body as if in triumph, and crushed him into a bleeding and promiscuous mass.

“Fear instantly seized upon our company; all involuntarily retreated, and seemed inclined to quit the unequal combat; all but myself, who, inflamed with grief and rage for the loss of my companion, determined either to revenge his death, or perish in the

attempt. Seeing, therefore, that it was in vain to attack him in the usual manner, I chose the sharpest arrow, and fitted it to the bow-string; then, with a cool, unterrified aim, observing the animal that moved nimbly on to the river, I discharged it full at his broad and glaring eye-ball with such success, that the barbed point penetrated even to his brain, and the monster fell expiring to the ground.

“This action, magnified beyond its deserts, gained me universal applause throughout the hamlet: I was from that time looked upon as one of the most valiant and fortunate of our youth. The immense body of the monster which I had slain was cut to pieces, and borne in triumph to the village. All the young women received me with songs of joy and congratulation; the young men adopted me as their leader in every hazardous expedition, and the elders applauded me with such expressions of esteem as filled my ignorant heart with vanity and exultation.

“But, what was more agreeable to me than all the rest, my father received me with transport, and, pressing me to his bosom with tears of joy, told me, that now he could die with pleasure, since I had exceeded his most sanguine expectations. ‘I,’ said he, ‘have not lived inactive, or inglorious; I have transfixed the tiger with my shafts; I have, though alone, attacked the lion in his rage, the terror of the woods, the fiercest of animals; even the elephant has been compelled to turn his back and fly before my javelin: but never, in the pride of my youth and strength, did I achieve such an exploit as this.’

“He then went into his cabin, and brought forth

the bow and fatal arrows which he was accustomed to use in the chase. 'Take them, take them,' said he, 'my son, and rescue my weaker arm from a burden which it is no longer destined to sustain. Age is now creeping on; my blood begins to cool, my sinews slacken, and I am no longer equal to the task of supporting the glories of our race. That care shall now be thine, and with a firmer hand shalt thou henceforth use these weapons against the beasts of the forest and the enemies of our country.'"

Such was the account which the negro gave to Tommy, in different conversations, of his birth and education. His curiosity was gratified with the recital, and his heart expanded in the same proportion that his knowledge improved. He reflected, with shame and contempt, upon the ridiculous prejudices he had once entertained; he learned to consider all men as his brethren and equals: and the foolish distinctions which pride had formerly suggested were gradually obliterated from his mind. Such a change in his sentiments rendered him more mild, more obliging, more engaging than ever; he became the delight of all the family; and Harry, although he had always loved him, now knew no limits to his affection.

One day he was surprised by an unexpected visit from his father, who met him with open arms, and told him, that he was now come to take him back to his own house. "I have heard," said he, "such an account of your present behaviour, that the past is entirely forgotten, and I begin to glory in owning

you for a son." He then embraced him with the transports of an affectionate father who indulges the strongest sentiments of his heart, but sentiments he had long been forced to restrain. Tommy returned his caresses with genuine warmth, but with a degree of respect and humility he had once been little accustomed to use. "I will accompany you home, Sir," said he, "with the greatest readiness; for I wish to see my mother, and hope to give her some satisfaction by my future behaviour. You have both had too much to complain of in the past; and I am unworthy of such affectionate parents." He then turned his face aside, and shed a tear of real virtue and gratitude, which he instantly wiped away, as unworthy the composure and fortitude of his new character.

"But, Sir," added he, "I hope you will not object to my detaining you a little longer, while I return my acknowledgments to all the family, and take my leave of Harry." "Surely," said Mr. Merton, "you can entertain no doubt upon that subject: and to give you every opportunity of discharging all your duties to a family, to which you owe so much, I intend to take a dinner with Mr. Sandford, whom I now see coming home, and then returning with you in the evening."

At this instant farmer Sandford approached, and very respectfully saluting Mr. Merton, invited him to walk in. But Mr. Merton, after returning his civility, drew him aside, as if he had some private business to communicate. When they were alone, he made him every acknowledgment that gratitude could suggest; "but words," added Mr. Merton, "are very insufficient to return the favours I have received; for